

1791

1792

1793

1794

HANDBOUND  
AT THE



UNIVERSITY OF  
TORONTO PRESS







~~1849~~ THE  
1852  
DEAN of COLERAINE.

A  
MORAL HISTORY:

FOUNDED ON THE  
M E M O I R S  
O F A N  
ILLUSTRIOUS FAMILY in *Ireland*.

---

A N E W E D I T I O N,  
Carefully Corrected and Improved.

---

I N T H R E E V O L U M E S.

---

V O L. I.

---

L O N D O N:

Printed for F. JULLION, N<sup>o</sup>. 23, Holborn Hill.

M. DCC. LXXX.

400024  
5.2.42

PQ

2021

D6E5

1780

V.1



## P R E F A C E.

**W**HATEVER may have been said concerning the taste of this age, I confess, for my own part, that I have not observed any one good writer who has failed of success. If bad writers have also succeeded, it has been either from the licentiousness of their works, with regard to morality or religion, or from the satire and detraction they contained. 'Tis not depravity of taste, therefore, but depravity of heart, the libertinism or malignity of mankind, that we ought to complain of in this and all other ages.

If the work I now publish should not please that good taste which I own to exist, I shall at least have this secret satisfaction, that I chose rather to renounce all applause, than to seek it by ways that I condemn. As the state of my fortune does not permit me to write on subjects that require time and tranquillity, I confine myself to those that are the most simple, the most virtuous, and the most agreeable. These three characters suit extremely with my situation; the first, because it lessens the labour of composing; the second, because it falls in with my profession and principles; the third, because by contributing to the sale of the work, it answers the chief end that I pursue in being an author.

All the three are so perfectly well united in this history, that I cannot sufficiently bless the good fortune which threw the materials of it into my hands. It little imports my readers, that I should give them an exact detail of this incident: I need only inform them, that the indulgence they have shewn to some of my former works of this kind, made the illustrious brethren, whose adventures I now present, believe I might touch over their manuscript to some advantage. They required the greatest part of the proper names to be kept concealed, which was almost the only restriction they laid me under. For the rest, I have made use of the liberty they left me of retrenching certain domestic particularities, which the difference of customs might have made to appear tedious, and perhaps ridiculous.

I have

## P R E F A C E.

I have so carefully husbanded the moral of my tale, that a just idea of the author's design must not be expected in the first volume. But, from the judgment I have formed upon reading over the whole work, I conceive that our dean proposed to bring together, in the history of his own family, all those rules of religion that are reconcileable with the customs and maxims of the world; in order to shew how far a christian may conform to the latter, and at what bounds he should stop. An undertaking of this nature will be thought of importance, if the execution answer the grandeur of the project. However that be, the reader will remark, in the very beginning, such openings into the characters of our three brothers and their sister, as will give him a glimpse of what he is to expect in the sequel.

George is an honest man, but without any other principles than those of natural morality. The dean is a Christian of the first order, rigorous even to excess; till acknowledging, at last, the necessity in human society of sometimes yielding to the weakness of another, he seeks, with the balance of the gospel in his hand, all those modifications and mediums that charity demands, and Christian justice tolerates. Patrick and Rose seem to me two ambiguous characters; good, but weak, and formed as if on purpose to give the other two continual occasion to exert their virtues, and consequently to put in the clearest light the difference between two worthy men, one of whom follows only the maxims of this world, and the other those of Christianity.

Will any one think, that a design so serious can render my subject susceptible of those agreements which I have seemed to promise? It would be assurance indeed to tell the reader, that he may depend upon my performance: However, the matter I have to work on appears to me so rich, that I am not afraid to exhort him once more to hope the best. Though I have not before so openly declared it; in all my other works I had the same point in view, as far as this kind of writing will admit. Whether I kept to it or no, and was at the same time agreeable, I leave those to determine who have read the life of Cleveland, or the memoirs of the marquis de Bretagne.

T H E



T H E

# P R E A M B L E.

**T**HEY who undertake to write either a general or particular history, commonly put pen to paper from one of these three motives: Either to raise a name, in presenting to the public a relation worthy of their attention, and consequently capable of fixing the author in their esteem as long as the work maintains a reputation; or from some view of self-interest, which engages them to wish, that certain obscure and doubtful actions, wherein they have borne a share, should be laid open to the world in a sense not only honourable for themselves, but favourable to their party: Or, finally, to gratify some resentments of ill-will, if they happen to have powerful reasons to bear an animosity against any person; of envy, if they look upon the fortune or reputation of another with an eye of jealousy; or from a natural malignity, if they have the misfortune to be of such a mischievous humour as to find pleasure in detraction, which incessantly hurries people of that turn to vent the poison of their hearts by those two dangerous instruments, the tongue and the pen.

It is plain, that of these three sources, two of them are such, to which the fidelity and impartiality agreeable to history ought not to give the least attention: for truth has no enemy to fear more powerful

than unruly passions, and personal interests. As to the first motive, although it carries the appearance of less suspicion than the other two; because it is in the main true, that the love of glory is a noble spur, which may actuate the soul of a writer in the same manner as that of an hero, and provoke each of them in their career to avoid every thing tending to cast a blemish on a design so excellent. Yet I am not satisfied whether this ardour itself of desiring to merit the applause of the publick ought not to create in us a fear, that an historian who proposes to himself no other aim, may not nevertheless be tempted to deviate from the strait part of truth. As plain truth is not always acceptable, it is no easy task for one, who is upon every occasion desirous of pleasing, to contain himself within bounds so strict as he has laid down for his own conduct; at least he will be apt to disguise if he be not capable of altering the truth. One may paint and imbellish a subject over much; and set it off with too many graces; and, which makes it more pernicious, the disguise is laid on with so much the more art in proportion to the intention of pleasing; yet the author must maintain certain appearances of sincerity, without which he may soon bid adieu to his reputation. And this manner of destroying truth, as it is the most subtle, so it is in the main the most dangerous.

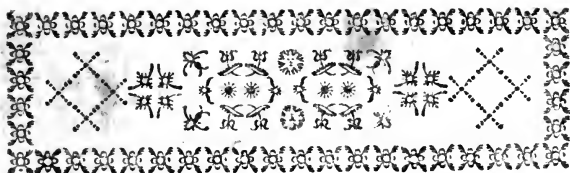
It follows from hence, that we should have few faithful histories, if these were the only three motives that without reserve could engage an historian to take up the pen. But I have not yet mentioned one motive, which is infinitely more elevated than the most noble of the other three, and which without doubt is only capable of exalting an historian to that degree of perfection, as to make him regarded for a pattern: I mean, *an Appetite of rendering himself profitable*. The whole is so well couched in these few words, that there is no necessity of any further explanation of them for such who can comprehend the plain meaning of the words.

Having

Having said thus much, shall I dare to advance further, that *Utility* is my motive in this undertaking? And shall not I accuse myself at the first setting out of aspiring to a perfection which surpasses my strength? I answer, that in ascribing so much virtue to the *Appetite of rendering one's self useful*, I suppose, that such person has for a foundation all the natural and acquired abilities necessary in every respect to form a good writer; and unfortunately these are not at all the things of which I can boast any share. I may therefore affirm, that though I have Ideas just enough of the particulars necessary for the perfection of the work I have undertaken, yet my talents are far inferior to my design. Nevertheless, the motive engaging me is just what I have mentioned, and I am so fully persuaded that it is proper to form good historians, when they find themselves supported with good qualities, in which I am deficient, that I verily believe that alone is capable of affording a supply to the meanness of my parts. If I have not imparted to me the beauty of imagination, which is a gift of nature, and the graces of style, which are most commonly the effects of art, yet to make some amends, I shall be sincere in my relation, modest in my expressions, and not only prudent and reasonable, but solidly christian in the principles of my moral. I shall forbear either to approve of or flatter vice even in the persons who have been the most dear to me, and I shall endeavour to turn the most profane events to the instruction of youth, and the edification of people of all ages and conditions, and consequently to the honour of heaven and advantage of human society.







T H E  
DEAN of COLERAINE.

---

B O O K I.

---

**T**HE history I give the public is rather that of my two brothers and sister, than my own. I was advanced into my fortieth year, and the profession I had embraced seemed to promise me as much tranquillity for the remainder of my life, as I had to that time enjoyed. An ecclesiastical benefit of a moderate income, a commodious habitation, a cast of mind and inclinations which gave me a taste for the duties of my employment, a great love for retirement and study, were the foundations of my fortune and repose: and as it was choice that disposed me to this kind of life, there was not the least appearance, that I could be weary of a condition, with which I was so well satisfied.

Nature had given me one advantage, which I voluntarily slighted. I was the first born of my family: but I must not conceal the reasons that made me renounce this pre-eminence, and by which heaven happily inspired me in a good hour with a hatred for the world and a taste for solitude. I

was born with three defects, from which all the application and remedies of art could not set me free. My legs were bowed and crooked, and bore no bad resemblance in shape to the two crotchets of a parenthesis; yet they were strong and robust enough, and of an equal length not to be any impediment to my walking upright. To add to this infirmity, I had a bunch on my back, and a counterpoise of the same sort and bulk before; and, to compleat my disgrace, my face was disfigured by two large warts regularly planted above my eyes, which spreading on my forehead appeared like two horns; add to this, that my head was exceeding large, my waist full, thick, bundled together, and extremely short: in fine, my whole figure seemed to define and mark me out for some other state than the world, where raillery much less spares the imperfections of the body, than the vices and irregularities of the soul.

I therefore did myself justice from the first moment I began to know myself, and I had at least this satisfaction in forming the design of renouncing the world, that my desires squaring with my necessities, I had not any violence in bringing myself to a submission. However, my mother having died in giving me life, my father found so little inclination to a second marriage, that this reason for a long time put a stop to his granting me the liberty of entering into the ecclesiastical state. He loved me, yet had need of all his paternal indulgence to find me amiable. He laboured to diminish the ill opinion I had of myself, and often inculcated to me, that my wit and judgment (of which he assured me I had a larger proportion than was common to those of my age) would supply the advantages which nature had refused me; and when I insisted on the excess of my deformity, he would answer in raillery, that his design was to marry me in good time, to the end I might give him grand children less disagreeable than myself. In short, when I had attained to my sixteenth year he looked out for a wife for me, without giving me notice of the great pains he took in the search.

He

He then found out one, perhaps the most beautiful young lady in the whole province, and continuing to leave me in ignorance of his resolution, he one day carried me with him to visit her. I saw there a most bewitching creature; but what I thought most surprising, after the picture I have drawn of myself, I found her so full of complaisance and kindness for me, that I could have wished not only to have felt a passion for the lady, but to have merited her's.

Ambition produced in her heart the same effect as love. She was of a birth inferior to mine, and my father having prepossessed her with the design of our visit, she gave less attention to my personal qualities, than to the title of countess, which she flattered herself she should enjoy in becoming my spouse. Our house, though extremely fallen from its ancient splendour, yet held one of the first ranks for quality in the county of Antrim. We traced our original to the famous Donald O'Neal, who in former times was king of that part of Ireland, which we call Cuid Guilly, and to which the English give the name of Ulster. In truth every thing had changed its face, since Cromwell and Ireton put the finishing hand to the reduction of our unhappy country to slavery; and the rigour of the yoke being laid indifferently upon the nobles and people, there were few families that had not a feeling sense of the public calamity. Add to this mischief, that our family having continued faithful to the ancient religion was another obstacle, which took from my father all those advantages that he might have drawn from his birth, and also carried the appearance of bereaving him of all hopes of fortune for his posterity. Notwithstanding we continued to maintain some remains of distinction in our country, and comforted ourselves under the disgraces wherein the English held us, by considering, that we yet found ourselves not banished, but still among our countrymen. Our substance, of which we had lost the greater part in the late wars, was yet sufficient to provide us an honourable maintenance, in comparison at least with

other noblemen of the province, who had been almost intirely stripped naked by the avarice and cruelty of the conquerors.

My father, having observed with pleasure, that my deformity did not at all disgust the lady whom he designed for my spouse, thought the success of his project infallible; since he could not imagine that any difficulties would arise from my resistance. I cannot really tell how it fell out, that I should remain insensible to such an abundance of charms; for in spite of my temper, which was naturally serious, I had always a heart susceptible of tenderness and love. But I was apparently chilled by the strong impression which my personal imperfections made on me; or rather heaven, which called me to another vocation, was watchful over my mind, to prevent in it any softnesses. Whatever it was, nothing could equal my father's surprise, when having discovered his views of matching me into this house, he found, that I rejected all his offers, and protested that my resolution was to live a single life. In vain did he renew his instances, and reiterate the same commands. All he could obtain from my obedience was, to bear him company in some other visits to the same place. I was received there with the same air of satisfaction, and my intentions appearing to be sufficiently understood by those of my father, she continued to treat me with a goodness, which made the temptation very dangerous. Nevertheless, in the very midst of the peril, and it may be in the moment when it was most urgent, since I was then alone with the beautiful creature who occasioned it, I formed a most extraordinary design, the success of which hath made me thankful to heaven for having inspired me with it.

Upon occasion of some questions which she asked me concerning the age and health of my father, I told her, that being yet under forty years old, and enjoying a perfect health, it was strange that he should be so determinately bent against marriage, which nevertheless was an engagement abundantly more suitable

able for him than me; that self-love did not at all hinder me from opening my eyes upon my imperfections, and confessing, that my heart and my person would be but a sorry present for a lady of her merit; that the justice which I knew how to do myself, and the sincere esteem I had for her, made me with reason fear that she did herself violence in suffering my presence and conversation; in fine, that it were to be wished for her sake, and for the interest of our house, that my father, instead of offering me, had himself made a tender of his heart and hand unto her: I added, that if she could relish this overture, and lend a helping hand to my project, I did not at all despair of bringing it to a good issue. And observing that my proposal had thrown her into a little embarrassment, I intreated her to unfold herself freely, and to depend intirely upon my sincerity and honour. Having pondered on the matter for a moment, she made me an answer, which did not leave me the least room to doubt of her true sentiments. She said, that she took my addresses as a very high honour, but since I had so little taste for matrimony, she found herself so prepossessed in favour of our house, that she would freely accept of my father's hand, if she could not obtain that of his son. I discovered an infinite joy to find her in this disposition. Thus, being persuaded of my sincerity, she made no difficulty of committing to me the care of her interests, and of promising that she would spare nothing on her part to give her power of triumphing over the indifference of my father.

As the sole reason that estranged him from women was the remembrance of my mother, whom he had loved passionately, it was no difficult task for a young lady, blessed with as much wit as beauty, and who made it her study to appear amiable in his eyes, to efface those ideas, which time alone ought before now to have enfeebled. I seconded her besides with all my power, and I had two causes for my zeal, which were pretty near equal;

the desire of seeing my father happy by a new marriage, and the fear of being myself obliged to enter into that state, if he should persist in his first resolutions. By force then of importunity and application I acquired not only a stepmother, who during the whole course of her life highly merited my reverence and affection, but also liberty to follow my inclination of embracing the ecclesiastical state, to which I had the call of heaven. In the first year of this happy marriage the almighty gave me a brother, and his birth was as it were a signal for the permission I obtained of entering into a new course of life.

I got my father's consent to go to Carrickfergus, and apply myself to a more regular course of study under the care of some Romish ecclesiastics, who there privately taught the divine and human sciences. I spent many years there, and did not return to my father's house until I had received holy orders from the Catholic archbishop of Armagh. Being irretrievably engaged to the service of heaven, I considered the choice of two sorts of employments, to which a Romish priest might apply himself in Ireland. Since the Reformation had become the prevailing religion in Ireland, there were few towns in it, or even villages, which were intirely made up of Catholics: Nevertheless, there were yet a number sufficient to form from an union of divers places some considerable parishes, which are ordinarily under the conduct of a parson or a dean, and sometimes even of many priests. In other places of the kingdom, where it would be difficult enough to reckon two Catholics among an hundred protestants, they received no other spiritual succour than from travelling missionaries, who employ their zeal from town to town, either to comfort the small number of the faithful, or to reclaim to the Roman communion such protestants as they may gain over by their private exhortations: But they have need of great circumspection to contain themselves within the bounds allowed by the laws; and if they are of the regular clergy, they cannot take one single step that does  
not

not expose them to punishment ; because their very entrance into the realm is forbidden under the penalty of death. Having then the choice of either of these two parties, I might possibly have followed the motions of my zeal, that made me look upon the second as the most laborious and most apostolic ; but the redoubled instances of my father and my stepmother stopped me short against my inclinations, and fixed me in a parish the nearest to their mansion-house.

This was a little town called Killerine or Coleraine, seated on the river Bann, at the extremity of the county of Antrim, and dependent on the jurisdiction of the bishop of Londonderry. The Romish religion had been so well preserved in this place, that the much greater part of the inhabitants made an open profession of it. The clergy were numerous there, and the dean, who was their head, had a respect payed him little inferior to a bishop. I engaged myself to this town, having first received the mission of the archbishop of Armagh ; and I lived there many years in profound quiet, dividing my time between the functions of my calling and the study of the holy scriptures. Ten years had passed over in this tranquillity, when the dean happening to die, my birth, and the rank in which my father stood, made them cast their eyes on me to fill that dignity. I was obliged to submit to the choice, notwithstanding the weakness of my talents, and to renew my endeavours at least of employing in the execution of my duty all the ardour and application of which I was capable.

During this time heaven had continued to shed its blessings upon my father's marriage ; his spouse brought him a second son five years after the birth of the first, and a daughter two years after that. They all three so happily shared the gifts of nature, that she seemed to study to make a sort of a reparation to our family for her rigour to me. George, who was the eldest, at the age of fifteen, passed for a man the best made, and of the most agreeable

able air in our province. His brother Patrick, though not so tall nor robust, yet drew more attention to him by the extraordinary beauty of his face, and the gracefulness of his whole form. As for their sister, whose name was Rose, nothing had been for a long time seen in the county of Antrim so perfect and amiable. I saw them grow up with admiration, and I sometimes asked my father if he repented his leaving me at liberty, to embrace an ecclesiastical state, and of charging himself with the care of providing heirs for himself. The land whereon he made his residence, being near enough to Coleraine, I had the liberty of going there often; and without neglecting the duties of my function, I watched over the education of his children, who were as dear to me as to him. I took his two sons by turns to my house, to begin the forming of their minds and manners, and to fit them for pursuing the usual course of studies in Trinity College, \* Dublin. They there distinguished themselves by their application and the progress they made in the Sciences. Heaven at this time took their mother to itself; but although this loss made my father desirous of calling them home about him, yet I prevailed on him to let them continue where they were, to finish the course of their studies; and Rose and I took on us the care of assuaging his grief. At last they returned from Dublin such as I wished them to be, that is to say, filled with judgment and sentiments becoming their birth, and their bodies and minds sufficiently formed to do honour to those who had the care of their education.

---

\* *This Scene must be in the reign of King James the second, who changed the College from a Protestant to a Popish Foundation, and when those of the latter communion were admitted to study there.*



Notwithstanding so many advantages, their parts and behaviour seemed to be unprofitable. Religion was an obstacle, which personal merit could not vanquish; insomuch that with all the qualifications which usually give a distinction in the world, they were, like their father, condemned to lead a private life in the county of Antrim, and confine themselves to domestic business. This reason, which I always had in view, was the thing which obliged me in a more particular manner to give them a taste for the sciences; thinking that they would in them at least find a virtuous and agreeable remedy against the irksomeness of idleness. The want of civil employments, from which their religion absolutely secluded them, was not all; they could have no hopes of advancing themselves in the army: But I was not ignorant to what perils they might be exposed by ambition; and the examples of a great number of lords, who would not have changed their religion but from this motive, made me apprehensive enough what I had to fear from them. My father entered with me into these sentiments, and we concluded to forbear at least for some time from employing them in the world, till the times should be a little more free, and a reign more favourable to the Roman religion than that of king William.

In this manner they spent many years, sometimes in study, sometimes in the diversions of the field, and other innocent amusements, which they could procure in a province removed far from court, and at a distance from great towns. They came often to Coleraine, and I payed them frequent visits at their estate. If I had as much tenderness for them as my father, they in return bore as much respect and friendship to me as they did to him. There never was a family better united, and more harmony. We spent our lives in such sweet tranquillity, that nothing but self-love could busy us in wishing for a change. Besides, we hitherto appeared to be very much estranged from all those schemes that

that could trouble our repose ; although, to speak freely, I had already made some remarks, which had given me a good insight into those things which I feared would come to pass.

Notwithstanding the continual calm in which we lived, I had occasion more than once to penetrate into the bottom of the characters of my brothers and sister. Their natural inclinations discovered themselves in order to betray them. In their opinions, in the choice of their pleasures, in the very object of their studies, I had room to observe that my two brothers did not always agree in sentiments ; and that this disagreement proceeded from a difference in their tempers. They had both of them a great deal of wit, but the tempering of that metal (if I may be allowed such a metaphor) was not at all the same. George had a wit more piercing than just ; or rather, being naturally daring and peremptory, he had got a habit of judging of every thing at the first view, as if his penetration had spared him the labour and slowness of sifting the argument ; and though it often fell out that he found himself in mistakes, he drew from the same principle an extreme attachment to his first sentiments : Infomuch that it was no easy matter to bring him to own that he was in the wrong. Another effect of the same weak side was, that every thing that presented itself to him in a brisk and sparkling form, and consequently laid a strong hold of his wit and imagination, could not much fail of strongly prepossessing him on either side of the question. So that the first impression went a great way with him in determining the whole argument. From this disposition it happened, that notwithstanding his retirement and the tranquillity of his occupations, he nourished secretly in his heart an ardent love for the world, of which he had got some taste in Dublin, and which he had figured to himself more flattering from the Ideas represented to him in his reading. The nobility of his birth, the misfortune to be born in such a country as Ireland, his continual  
wishes.

wishes for some happy revolution to bring about a change in the government, as well as in his own fortune, such were the ordinary subjects of his conversation and thoughts. His library was made up of nothing but historical works, serious histories or romances; he had the same taste for every thing that could help to augment in his imagination this phantom of the world, with which he was charmed, yet in other respects he was in all his sentiments good, sincere, generous, sober, intrepid, and, in one word, furnished with every quality necessary to form an honest man in the common acceptation of the words.

Patrick, though he was five years younger, was of a character much more difficult to penetrate. Although nothing was so amiable and so prepossessing as his form, nothing also appeared more sweet, and more complaisant and flexible than his humour. He was always in a disposition to oblige; to submit and acknowledge the merit of others, and the truth of their sentiments; to condemn his own opinion when he was brought to see his error, and to testify his gratitude to those who did him so good an office; and this he would do with so much grace, and so little affectation, that it was surprising to find such an uncommon docility in a young man, in whom were equally united all the accomplishments of wit and person. But that which was difficult to understand in his character was, that Patrick was as insupportable to himself, as he appeared amiable in the eyes of others. He could find nothing that was capable of giving him satisfaction, or of making him relish one real sentiment of pleasure. The most painful occupations were no more to him than an amusement, which always left some void to fill in the bottom of his heart. Whatever delights he had the art of diffusing in conversation, or in a party of pleasure, he drew no benefit to himself from those things which created high satisfaction in others. Under a gay and undisturbed countenance he carried a secret fund of melancholly

cholly and inquietude, which would not suffer him to have a sense of any thing but of himself, and which without intermission provoked in him a longing for every thing he wanted. These devouring wants, this absence of an unknown good, were impediments to his happiness. I have drawn this picture of his heart from a copy which he himself has an hundred times given me in bitterly bewailing his own peculiar lot. In fine, he was very exact in acquitting himself of the ordinary duties of society; yet he found himself often under constraint from the observances of decorum. He voluntarily preferred solitude to any commerce with the world; his books being his only consolation. A just and solid argument, a happy expression, a delicate turn, a sentiment tender and well conducted, gave him more pleasure than all the riches and honours of the world; because he found in them something which served at least to tickle his heart and his reason for a moment, and every thing else gave him only fatigue, and even inspired him with aversion and disgust.

This is an exact character of Patrick, such as I have known him to be during the whole course of his life. However, I did not come at this knowledge all of a sudden. Upon his return from the college of Dublin, I discovered by a close attention, that he had something very extraordinary in his character, but it took me up a good while thoroughly to unfold this very puzzling riddle. By force of my observations I thought I had got possession of one part of his secret, and in the end I prevailed on him by importunity and the most tender marks of friendship to suffer me clearly to read the bottom of his soul. He made me all the discoveries which I wanted to unravel. His disease, though of a nature so strange, did not appear to me to be without remedy. I offered him then one, which without doubt would from that time have been proper to have wrought his cure, if he had had fortitude enough to relish the first bitterness; but the question was how to submit to some violences, to which Patrick was not at that time

time in the least disposed. I in vain attempted to make him comprehend, that what he looked upon as a misfortune might possibly be a favour from heaven, that called him in an especial manner to the service of God, and who did not send him the trials of those perpetual afflictions, under which he groaned, for any other reason than to give him a longing for that only good, to the possession of which the repose of the heart is attached. My exhortations were at that time unprofitable: Not that he had occasion to subdue in his heart any habits contrary to the common duties of religion; but he had not as yet any taste of that sublime virtue to which I exhorted him, and which I thought necessary for his repose. We shall see by what steps it pleased heaven to conduct him to it.

If I had occasion of a little study to sift into the bottom of the characters of my brothers, nothing in the world was so easy for me as to understand that of my sister. It was legible both in her eyes and her countenance. The happy temperament of her blood and humours, which formed the beauty of her complexion, served not only to render her soul perpetually calm, but also to adorn her with a thousand amiable qualities, and to communicate as many charms to her mind, as it diffused outwardly over her whole person. Sweet, complaisant, extremely modest, as well regulated in her desires as in her actions, nothing was so even as her conduct and temper. She had not as yet made reflections, whether a woman be proper for any thing else than for the little cares in which her father held her employed; and I have sometimes admired, how with that fund of wit, which I knew she had, she could so calmly contain herself within a circle of childish amusements, less suitable to her reason than to her age. But this simplicity proceeded from the innocence of all her sentiments. She was handsome without knowing it; she pleased without intending it; and she was indebted to herself alone for her wit, though superior to her occupations; because she had no acquaintance with that

of

of others. With dispositions so happy it seemed as if nothing else was to be expected from her but modesty and virtue. For my part, I was so persuaded of it, that having had it often in my thoughts to give her some instructions more serious, and better proportioned to her natural talents, I waved my design for this reason alone; that innocence being the most happy lot of a virgin, it appeared to me to be useless, and might be dangerous in furnishing her with hints as little necessary for her happiness as her virtue. Nevertheless, when she had passed her fifteenth year, I fancied I perceived that her then age had made some little alteration in her. Whether the conversation of my brother George had extended her ideas, or whether it was only the effect of nature, I observed more vivacity in her eyes, and abundantly less simplicity in her behaviour. Her blood, which had been till then within a moderate degree of warmth, appeared now to flush out in heat when a party of pleasure was proposed. She took a taste for reading, but she had her books from George; and I one day by chance discovered, that he supplied her with none but romances. I fell into reproaches against them both. She promised me to abandon this trifling occupation. I believe she performed her promise; but I could not help remarking more and more, that she began to open her eyes upon her own merit, and was instructed in many things of which before she had no notion.

I never went to their house without renewing my advice and exhortations; which the esteem they had for me, and the friendship that they knew I had for them, inured them to receive very freely. I also avoided with care all severe and discouraging airs. Moreover, my father had intrusted to me the conduct of his whole family. They were acquainted with his pleasure upon that head: insomuch that this good father being upon his death-bed, they found no pain in promising him during his last moments to have always the same docility in being governed by my advice, and of maintaining the same sentiments for me

me which they had for him. Nothing was so moving as these last marks of tenderness, with which he took a final farewell of his afflicted family. Having exacted from my brothers and sister a promise of respecting and obeying me during their whole lives, he obliged me also by an absolute command to engage myself to them in holding the place of a father whom they were about losing, and of regarding them always as the most dear objects of my affection and care. He enjoined me to embrace them in his presence, to confirm our promises by this pledge of an inviolable fidelity; and he embraced us himself one after another, bathing us with his precious tears. He died at such an age, wherein reason made him abandon life without regret, because he had accustomed himself to consider death as a tribute due to nature; and he carried away the sweet consolation of knowing that never father had been more happy than he in the reverence and sincere affection of all his children.

How afflicting soever this loss was to us, it made no change in our affairs or condition. George was past twenty-five years old, and was now in the state of charging himself with the conduct of a family; and he did so indeed effectually, having first entreated me to yield him the usual assistance of my counsels. We continued to live for some months in a perfect good understanding. Patrick was in his twentieth year, and Rose about seventeen. Their conduct was prudent, and did not as yet give me any disappointment; for what I have already hinted of their character was only (as I may call it) in the seed, which yet had produced no crop, nor disclosed itself to any other eyes than mine. We appeared then more calm than ever; when by the secret springs of providence we had a future lot prepared for us entirely different. Another country, another fortune, other occupations, and other cares; in fine, adventures, afflictions and troubles without number. It is from this point that I properly begin our story.

Although commerce was not at all in a flourishing state through all the northern parts of Ireland, and, except Londonderry and Carrickfergus, there were few maritime towns frequented by strangers; however, we had now and then the pleasure of seeing some merchant ships arrive at the little towns seated at the mouths of rivers. They drew from this situation the advantage of receiving directly their wines, their oils, and other commodities which nature had denied our island. Coleraine being but a league from the sea, from time to time received this benefit by means of the river Bann, which washed its walls. About a year after the death of my father there arrived there a French vessel laden with a cargo of wine, the captain of which had the courtesy of making a visit to me, as to the head of the catholics of that town. His name was de Pesses, a young man of an agreeable face, and a politeness uncommon in a Sea-faring man. I received him with that civility which I thought due to a stranger, and particularly to Frenchmen; the people of which country had for a long time an inclination to our family, on account of the language of their nation, which my brothers, my sister and I perfectly well understood, and we could not excuse ourselves from shewing some affection for those who spoke it. The merit which I observed in Mr de Pesses, was a fresh reason for my desiring to countenance his interests. I entreated him to be no stranger at my house, and I not only did him all the services necessary to his affairs, but when I thought I was acquainted well enough with him to treat him with confidence, I proposed to him to make a party with me to go see my brothers and sister, and assured him that his visit would be agreeable: We took this walk more than once; and Mr de Pesses gave them such a taste at his first acquaintance, that I was not well received by my brothers nor by Rose when they saw me arrive without him.

One may easily imagine that the delights of France made a part in all our conversations, and that Mr de Pesses did not at all spare to draw us a model  
of.



of the charming picture of a country that gave him birth. The enchanting description that he gave us of Languedoc and Provence, and of other parts of the realm, made them appear to us equal to the abodes of gods or fairies. He had lived a long time at Paris; and every thing he related of that celebrated city excited our admiration. Besides, he gave his recital with a good grace; and George and Rose were never weary in lending their attention. Even the inquietude of Patrick found some relief from it; and this was the Orpheus that suspended the torments of Sisyphus and Ixion.

One day, as they appeared charmed with his discourse, he took an occasion to say, in a more grave tone, that he could not but be surprised, that persons of their birth, their age, and personal qualities, had chose to bury themselves in a desert corner of Ireland, whilst they had the liberty of leaving it, and of spending a life full of pleasures in the finest country in the world, that for these twenty years past he had carried over from our island great numbers of worthy people, who had but little temptation to return, having once got a taste of the charms of France; that of an infinite number of examples he would mention only that of Mr Dillon, whom he had the honour to know, and who was loaded with all sorts of favours immediately after his arrival at Versailles; that without counting upon the way of rising in the army, to which this gentleman had engaged himself, there were a thousand other paths to fortune both at court and at Paris; that a stranger well born, and of a good mein, could not fail of the protection of the most generous court, and of the greatest of all kings, whose chief subjects might be considered as so many Princes, who by their riches and magnificence had the advantage over a great number of Sovereigns, and placed their glory in following the examples of bounty and generosity which they were continually receiving from their master; that as to those who failed of making a fortune at court, Paris presented such with inexhaustible resources, that gaming there

there alone every day raised an incredible number, both of French and strangers to great opulence; that in every quarter of that town were gaming ordinaries, or rather fountains of gold and silver not to be drained, from whence the good luck of one moment might draw up wherewithal to enable one to pass the longest life happily; that an handsome well made man, who has no taste for gaming, might yet with less hazard procure himself an establishment by the means of women; that the old, the young, maids and widows, were equally idolaters of a good mein, and that a young man with this sort of merit might, when he thought little of it, marry the richest heiress of Paris; that if the French ladies had so great foibles for the men, the nobility and men of wealth had yet more for the women; that at court, in the city, in the country, a person of the merits of Miss Rose might assure herself of adoration, that there was no degree of rank, of riches, or of fortune, that were above her views, or rather that she might not expect to see laid at her feet; in fine, to give the finishing stroke to this flattering picture, Mr de Pesses added, that the taste for arts, for sciences, for wit and beauty, being in the highest degree of perfection in France, my brothers and sister, who possessed all those talents united, ought not to be permitted to bury themselves in Ireland, and to rob his country of the satisfaction that all the world would find cause to admire in them.

Whether this discourse was uttered with a serious view, or proceeded only from a politeness common to the French, I observed that it made a deep impression upon my brothers and sister. George looked successively on Patrick and Rose with an eye that seemed to consult their approbation; and I thought I saw in their eyes such an answer as George required. In the mean time, as they found an embarrassment in explaining themselves, they at first avoided to make a direct answer to the proposals and flatteries of Mr de Pesses. In fine, George, wearied with doing himself such violence, cast his eyes again on his bro-

brother and sister, to assure himself of their consent, and turning to me : I am very backward, says he, in-applying to myself all that is flattering in the compliments of Mr de Pesses, and of promising myself all the advantages which his civility makes us hope for ; but since so many others have passed into France, and have been well received there, why may not we follow their examples, since it is certain we are obliged to do so by the same reasons. He then asked what I myself thought of the project.

I confess I found myself in my turn under some confusion, since upon the whole, the silence of the two others convinced me that they had the same sentiments as their brother. I too well knew the bottom of their characters, to suffer myself to be deceived. My sister reddened with joy at the time that Mr de Pesses had assured her with an air of flattery, that she should be adored in France, and that there was no country in the world where more justice was done to the merit of women. George was dazzled with the brilliant picture he had drawn of Paris, and of the court, and upon the whole, with the ease by a little industry of finding means there of elevating himself to riches and honours. In truth, the example of Mr Dillon was seducing. This Gentleman, with whom he had been educated in Dublin, and who was neither richer, nor of a better family than we, had not at all any other title than George to aspire to court favours. In fine, I plainly perceived, that these gaming ordinaries where they played so high, and where the most unfortunate might hope to become rich at last, if fortune did but favour them for a moment, had put the finishing hand to the gaining over of George, and did not suffer him from that time to look upon Ireland but with contempt.

As to Patrick, it was enough to propose any thing to him, under a shape of novelty, to inspire him with a desire for it ; not indeed that he conceived any strong taste for what he began to desire, but because  
being

being disgusted with all that he possessed, his heart promised him more satisfaction in a change.

The only answer which I gave to them and to Mr de Pesses turned upon the difficulties of such a proposal. A project of this importance, says I, cannot be executed so easily as it is formed. You do not at all consider what it is to abandon one's country to pass into an unknown land, where one may be uncertain of finding support and protection. Do you believe that one can live on nothing in France? And without reckoning the necessary charges of the voyage, how do you flatter yourselves to gain a supply for your first expences on your arrival at Paris. When you reflect on selling your patrimony here, you know well that this is not a business very easily to be accomplished in Ireland; and supposing you have an opportunity of disposing of it, you cannot draw from it near the value. They had nothing to reply to objections of such weight: But if they were not prepared to yield to them at first, it was no more than to have the opportunity of meditating at leisure on the means of coming to a resolution. In effect, in a few days after, my brother George took an occasion to speak to me in private, and told me that having maturely deliberated with Patrick and his sister, and drawn from Mr de Pesses all the lights that might favour their project, they were confirmed in the resolution of quitting Ireland; that indeed they were at first cooled by my objections, but that it depended on him alone to defeat them; that if I would not only consent to their departure, but become the head of their enterprize and guide of the voyage, they did not at all apprehend the difficulties which I had foretold; that he could not find many obstacles to the selling of our patrimony, since the question was in fixing an establishment more agreeable and advantageous in a charming country, where they took a glory in treating strangers with civility, and where the example of a great number of our countrymen seemed to invite us; that as to the little money we could draw from our lands, it would suffice not only for our voyage, but for supporting us commodiously at Paris, until providence, and the generosity

of the French had found out some occasion of employing us; that as to me, having passed all my life to good purpose in study, I need not at all doubt but the clergy of France would treat me with distinction, and quickly give me an opportunity of exercising my talents; that we could easily find a way to dispose of our sister, either by marrying her at Paris, where they say beauty is an infallible road to fortune, or in preferring her honourably to some lady of the first distinction; that as to himself and Patrick, they had each of them a sword, and by the favour of heaven enough of good blood in their veins to open to themselves an honourable road in the profession of arms, if nothing presented more advantageous for their establishment; that they required only, that I should continue to assist them as a father, as I had hitherto done with extreme goodness, and they had so much confidence in my wisdom and affection, that they promised themselves all sorts of good fortune under my conduct.

The air with which he accompanied this discourse, gave me to understand more than his reasons, that it was absolutely determined we should part, and that I should get nothing by combating this resolution. My confusion was exceeding great. I could not say, that the choice they had a mind to make was not advantageous for their fortune, and that, at the age they were of, with so little hopes of being employed in Ireland or England, they had not good reason to think of settling in some Catholic state: But I could not at all discover that my interests were the same, nor consequently that I ought to suffer myself to be swayed by the same motives. If I gave ear to nothing but my own inclinations, I was satisfied with my benefice, and ambition had not yet made me form other views. If I consulted my duty, it appeared to me, that being engaged to a flock, which providence had committed to my charge, I could not abandon it without infidelity. I saw missionaries every day arrive in Ireland from France and the Low-Countries, who forsook their country merely out of

zeal for religion, and who came to employ all their lives either in the instruction of Catholics or the conversion of Protestants. Ought I then to shew less zeal than strangers for the salvation of my countrymen? Considerations so just should have detained me in Ireland in spite of myself, if I had any propension to quit it; and they still became stronger, when joined to the taste I naturally had for my residence at Coleraine, and for the duties of my employment.

In the mean time, having made some new and unprofitable efforts to persuade my brothers and sister to change their design, I found myself extremely divided between my tenderness for them and the reasons that ought to have stayed me. To suffer them to go alone, and abandon them to themselves, was another kind of crime, of which I did not think myself capable. I recalled in my memory the last will of a dying father, and the solemn promises by which we were engaged in his presence, they to respect and obey me, and I to assist them with my cares and counsels. This engagement was the most sacred of all my duties. I moreover reflected, that the bonds of nature of themselves outweighed all other obligations, and that if the love of our neighbour be commanded by the gospel, it is doubtless with a just proportion, by which the different degrees of proximity ought always to be regulated. I had nothing so near to me as my brothers and sister; I loved them tenderly; they merited my affection. Add to this, that from their characters, with which I was well acquainted, they had all three very near an equal necessity for a guide, at least till they arrived at that age, when the heat of their passions should abate. In fine, this last consideration turned the balance in their favour. It is certain said I to them, I owe more to you than to all the world besides: But this is to suppose that your affection shall always be suitable to mine, and that you will religiously observe my advice, since this is the motive that makes you desire my company. They  
promised

promised me this with joy. In consenting also to accompany them, I took another resolution, with which I was so much the more satisfied, as it served in some measure to reconcile all my duties; and that was, not to abandon absolutely my benefice, and to make my departure considered only as a journey of a short duration, which I had undertaken only to conduct my family into France: I committed the care of my flock into the hands of my vicar. My intention in reality was some time or other to resume this dear charge, and to return into Ireland as soon as my presence should cease to be necessary to my brothers and sister. But heaven provided for me another lot, which it held concealed from me under the undiscoverable veils of futurity. I was going to commence a course of life the most strange in the world, and of which there had not been seen an example in a man of my character and profession, and to find myself as it were constrained to follow by a chain of adventures so extraordinary, that they well deserve the pains which I have taken in writing them, in order to render them more profitable for the instruction of the public.

George spared no pains in finding readily a favourable opportunity of selling the estate of our ancestors. In a country less desolate than Ireland it would have been possible to have raised enough to have assured us of an honourable support in whatever part of Europe we had chosen our sanctuary; but all things at that time bore such a vile price through our miserable province, that it was difficult to make three thousand pistoles of what could not be worth less than ten thousand. We could not in like manner get rid of some country concerns which were in the neighbourhood of Coleraine; insomuch that being under a necessity of abandoning them intirely, I could find no other expedient but to commit them to the trust of the same ecclesiastic to whom I had confided the care of my flock. He took the charge of them, with the liberty of turning them to the best account for his own profit, and without other condition than to deli-

ver them up faithfully to those who should re-demand them by an authority from us.

Our departure was not long deferred. My brothers agreed with Mr. de Pesses to take the advantage of his vessel for our passage; and he worthily promised that in our favour he would land us at Dieppe, from whence the journey is but short and easy to Paris. We happily reached this port. Mr. de Pesses came on shore with us out of complaisance, and his company procured us an adventure so advantageous, that we drew from it the most happy omens for the remainder of our enterprize. Passing the evening with us in the inn where we took up our lodging, he espied a French merchant of his acquaintance, with his wife, whom he also knew, and some children with them. He saluted them kindly, but the constraint and uneasiness which he remarked in them, made him think that they were not well pleased to be taken notice of. He had a penetrating judgment, and as he knew them to be protestants, and that nothing was at that time so common, as to see great numbers pass over into our islands for the sake of professing their religion, of which the exercise was forbidden in France by the king's edicts, he did not doubt a moment, but that they were of the number of those fugitives, and that the fear of being arrested was the cause of the trouble which he observed in them. He, who was very far from doing them any ill offices, on the contrary made haste to deliver them from their suspicions, in assuring them, that he saw into the truth of their designs, but, that far from opposing the motions of their consciences, he admired the zeal that made them prefer their religion to their fortune. This discourse reviving their confidence, they made no scruple of supping with us; we having first prayed them not to let any word drop in the inn, that might betray them. At supper we admired the fantasticalness of this rencounter, and made divers reflections upon the conduct of heaven, which sometimes permitted error and truth to have a near resemblance in their effects. Each of us turned this  
thought



thought to his advantage ; but what caused our just admiration was this. The merchant abandoned his country for the sake of enjoying in our's what we came in quest of to his ; for if religion was not the sole motive of our journey to France, it was at least the principal one ; since without that it was possible for us to think of establishing in England. Our views were then in effect the same ; yet our principles being nevertheless so opposite, that the one could not be true without supposing the falsity of the other, we were obliged to acknowledge, that in making one of the greatest sacrifices that men can make to heaven, either one or the other of us took a step both false and unprofitable.

After some fervent aspirations that these thoughts made us mutually offer for the conversion of each other, Mr. de Pesses took occasion to ask the merchant if he had address or good fortune enough to secure all his substance in a place of safety. He answered, that the principal part of it consisting in goods of export and ready money, he had the precaution to send them to London before his departure from Paris ; but that the fear of betraying himself by some indiscretion had prevented him from disposing of a handsome country-house at a small distance from town, and which without doubt would fall into the power of his friends, when they should be assured of his escape. Heaven, cried Mr. de Pesses, addressing himself to the merchant and me, heaven has inspired me with a thought, which may turn to extreme advantage for you both. You have left, says he, some lands in Ireland, and Mr. — has left an estate near Paris ; since you are both resolved to change countries, why should ye not make an exchange of estates ; which will at least answer this end, to save something for both of you from shipwreck, and will prevent strangers from profiting by your spoils ? I see no difficulty, added he ; for you will not over-reach one another upon the inequality of lots, let it go on which side it will, since you are already determined to lose all ; and I dare

warrant you, that from the motives which conduct each of you in your views, one will without trouble obtain in France, and the other, in England, to be put in possession of the estate of each other: Do you two procure only a deed of sale or donation, which may serve for a foundation to your pretensions, and a little favour and protection will do the rest.

The merchant did not hesitate a moment, as soon as he was assured by Mr de Pesses, that I had in reality left an estate in Ireland; nor I, having received from him the same assurances. We considered no further than to execute two deeds in the ordinary form, and we parted equally satisfied on every side. I have not forgot the name of this honest man, to whom our family is so much indebted for the first fruits of its establishment in France. He was called Mr de Lezan. The acknowledgements we thought we owed him, and which were not diminished by what he owed us, obliged us to stay eight days at Dieppe to favour his departure.

I was exceedingly surprised, when we were preparing to take leave of this town, to hear Mr de Pesses say, that he designed to accompany us as far as Paris, and that trusting to the skill of his lieutenant, he had committed to him the care of his ship, during the rest of the voyage. I gave but a slight opposition to this offer, such as one usually gives to an excessive civility, which one is not displeased to receive. Having made a long abode at Paris, he had it in his power to do us considerable services at our arrival, and, upon the whole, to facilitate the means of drawing some profit from the deed of Mr de Lezan. But this zeal to oblige us made me open my eyes upon a thing, of which till then I had not the least suspicion. Mr de Pesses was become sensible of the merit of my sister, and could not resolve to part with her; so that what I thought an action of politeness, was in reality no other than an effect of love. This discovery did not give me any disturbance; on the contrary, hoping that the wit and beauty of Rose might serve to recommend her

her in France to some advantageous settlement, I flattered myself, that without going further, her good fortune presented to her in the person of Mr de Pesses all that she could desire. He was young and well-made, and his expences gave me room to judge that he was rich; and though he was not of a birth equal to ours, yet the situation of our affairs, and the condition of strangers, ought to make us less delicate upon such an inequality. I looked therefore with a very undisturbed eye on his assiduities about my sister, and on the marks that he continually gave her of his affection. My two brothers, who took notice of it as well as I, looked upon it in the same light as I did, and when they put me in mind of what they had remarked, we all three agreed in the conceit that the addresses of Mr de Pesses was an advantage both for her and for us. The opinion which we had conceived of him was augmented at Rouen, where he brought us into the acquaintance of a great many creditable people, who were the friends of his father or his own, and from whom we dexterously drew all the testimonies that could give us assurances of his wealth; and though we could receive no satisfaction as to the nobility of his family, yet at least we had sufficient evidence of what consideration it was in his country, and of the honourable rank it held there in the gown, and in commerce. We obtained besides, at Rouen, some letters of recommendation to many persons of the first rank, acquainting them with the exchange of estates, which I had made with Mr de Lezan, requesting them, in favour of it, to give us all the furtherance and credit they had at court, either by themselves or their friends.

We arrived at Paris in a season of great plenty, and when luxury and pleasure seemed to be the business of people of all conditions. This sight was new to us, who hitherto had seen nothing but poverty and misery in the desolate villages of Ireland. I remarked a sensible effect that this change produced in my brothers and sister. Before we en-

tered into any thoughts of serious business, we employed some days in recovering ourselves from the fatigues of our journey. But I was the only one of our company, who profited by this repose. My brothers spent their mornings and evenings in running about the town, in making acquaintances, and being introduced into all the places to which they could obtain access. My sister passed whole days at her window, with an eager curiosity of seeing and observing every thing, and appeared as if she had been enchanted with the magnificence of dress and equipage presenting themselves to her eyes. In the evenings, when supper time drew us together, I was obliged to endure the eternal stories of George, who gave us relations of what he had seen; as well as the accounts of Rose, who was no less charmed with all the objects which had given her employment at her post. The taste or rather the passion, which they had for the world, declared itself even in their countenances and tone of their speech. I had not the least doubt but that their imaginations were faithful interpreters to them in their sleep, and represented even in more lively colours those pleasures which they had admired in the day. Patrick on the other hand became melancholy and thoughtful. With pain he opened his mouth to pronounce a few words: He seemed to muse on every thing extraordinary, and was not able to determine whether his reverie proceeded from melancholy or joy.

Whatever manner I had to explain Patrick's sentiments, I could nevertheless draw better omens from them than from the excessive wandering of the other two. Mr. de Pesses had taken a lodging different from ours; and his first attention upon our arrival was, to inform himself in what condition Mr. de Lezan had left his affairs at his departure. He found them such as we had understood them from himself. As soon as his friends were assured of his escape, they without scruple entered into possession of all that belonged to him, and the country house was by no means forgotten.

forgotten. Although we ought to have apprehended some difficulties in making our estate turn to account, yet the zeal and industry of Mr. de Pesses in the end removed all obstacles. He gave me no other trouble in the conduct of this affair, than in paying some visits to the chancellor, the first president, and the archbishop of Paris. The protection of these three lords, which he had the credit to procure for us, shortened the process, and in fine, put us into the peaceable possession of the estate of Mr. de Lezan. We returned thanks to providence for so easily obtaining this little retreat, which at first sight appeared to be exceedingly agreeable. It is three quarters of a league from Paris, and in a situation so charming, that it may well pass for a seat of pleasure.

After having rendered us this important service, Mr. de Pesses, who had no room to doubt of our acknowledgments, and had many reasons to be assured of our esteem, sought an opportunity to open to me his affection for my sister. He was utterly ignorant that I had penetrated into them. His compliment was short and without affectation, but pronounced in a very timorous tone. I answered him out of hand with an air favourable enough to remove his diffidence; that he had demanded nothing which I was not well disposed to grant, that his generosity and his zeal for the interest of our family merited this just return, that I thought myself even very happy, that he had thrown in our way an opportunity of acquitting ourselves to the satisfaction of his heart by the most tender instances; in fine, that if he had such love for my sister as to desire to make her his spouse, I should not only with a good grace join their hands, but if he had not as yet brought her to a disposition of consenting to their marriage, I promised to employ all my pains to make her conformable to his desires. The joy that he discovered at this answer, gave me room to understand for the first time something which I never before was sensible of by experience; but which

an infinite number of other examples too well confirmed in the sequel: I would say, that the transports in which I saw Mr de Pesses, who was naturally discreet and circumspect in all his actions, taught me that love is not only a violent passion, but that it possesses the imagination with as sovereign a sway as it does the heart, and, extending its tyranny over the body and soul, it disturbs all at once both the blood and reason.

This tender-hearted young man threw himself at my knees, embracing them with a motion filled with passion, and not being able to find words expressive enough, he remained for some time in silence more eloquent than any words. Coming at length to himself he gave me the most lively thanks, and the least thing he offered me was the disposal of his life and fortune. I was till now quite a stranger from imagining he could be so amorous; but what he added enlarged yet more the idea of his passion. As, says he, there is nothing in the world so amiable as Madam Rose, it is also impossible but she must always inspire an excess of love. What I am going to tell you is a secret I have concealed from you till now, and which she herself knows but in part; for it is not indeed credible that she should behave with such cruelty to me, if she had been acquainted with all my tenderness. He then told me that his passion had its birth in Ireland; that there he had the boldness to declare his love to her; that far from being repulsed, he had found in the beginning indulgence enough to give him abundance of hope for the time to come, and that he had continued to flatter himself during his journey from Coleraine to Paris, but that by a change of which he was ignorant of the cause, and which threw him into despair, he found himself so far removed from any hopes, that he durst not accost my sister but with trembling; that instead of that sweetness and savour, of which she did not refuse to give him some slight marks, she now treated him rather with scorn and disdain, which pierced his heart; that it was this  
reason

reason that gave rise to the thought of opening himself to me, in order to gain more assurance from my approbation, if he could be so happy as to obtain it; that the fear with which he opened his mouth to unbosom himself could not be equalled but by the joy he felt at my answer; that the esteem and amity, of which I had been so good to assure him, was to him the most sweet consolation; but that if I would permit him to expect any testimonies of my friendship, it should be to re-establish him in the heart of Rose, which would do him the only service of which he could be sensible.

I listened with great attention to a discourse, of which all the terms were entirely new to me. I could not help adding to my former answer a confirmation of what I had before promised. I am of an age, says I to the melancholy Mr de Pesses, and of a profession, which gives me but small permission of entering into the secrets of your little chagrins of love. Nevertheless, the detail which you have given me serves to redouble my desires of obliging you; and I will talk this day to my sister in a sense the most conformable to your inclinations. In short, I went to look for her without delay, and found her in her chamber busied in decking herself out, and receiving the advice of George, who informed her of the newest fashions, and assisted her in following them. I asked them, what was the design of such a studied dress? George answered, that he had proposed to his sister to take a walk, and that as they were at Paris it was no way proper she should appear abroad dressed like a country lass of Ireland. Having no reason to take this answer in an evil part, I contented myself in giving them a short moral upon the superfluity of some parts of our dress, and upon the childishness of the modes. It is true, said I, it would be ridiculous in France to avoid following the fashions; but I know that in France itself it has raised the compassion of some persons of good sense to see them followed with too much affectation. Mind this rule, added I, which I found in an excellent French author, "reasonable women receive the  
" modes,

“ modes, and add nothing to them; they are not the  
“ first to take them up, nor the last to lay them  
“ down.” They could not but approve of my reflection; but neither one nor the other of them were in a disposition to take and follow it.

I changed the discourse, to acquaint Rose with the motive that drew me to her chamber. I discovered to her plainly the design of Mr. de Pesses, and his sentiments for her. I added, that in the circumstances of our fortune I listened to his proposal of taking her to wife as a real advantage; and if she would take my advice, I was of opinion she would accept of his hand without scruple. George was a witness to this discourse, and I did not in the least doubt, but, having remarked at Dieppe the same sentiments that I had concerning this marriage, he would join his instances to mine in persuading his sister to consent to it. Nevertheless, he immediately answered, that he was surprised to see me so soon forget from whom we drew our birth, and to propose a wine merchant for a spouse to the daughter of the Earl of ———. For his part, if he had any influence over his sister, it should be to remain a virgin all her life, rather than consent to an alliance so unequal. Rose answered me only in a few words; but they were such as demonstrated the same repugnance to the proposal. Constraint never has any power over the heart to lead it. In other respects, whatever superiority, age, and the voluntary regards of my brothers and sister had made me assume over them till now, yet I never treated them with haughtiness, nor exacted more from them than friendship; so now, without observing to Rose how ill satisfied I was with her answer, I confined myself in representing to her all the reasons that had persuaded me of the advantage she would have in receiving this proposal, and in performing the word I had given Mr. de Pesses. I recommended to her at least to treat with a little more kindness and complaisance a man to whom we owed such great obligations. My last words made her smile, and without explaining herself



self further, she looked at George with an air that signified something, but which I could not comprehend.

They went out together. The night was far advanced when they returned to our lodging. Whatever inquietude their absence raised in me, yet I had so good an opinion of their conduct, that I went to rest at my usual hour, so that it was morning before I was acquainted with their return. I was also informed by chance, before they were awake, in what business they had employed the better part of the night. Mr. de Pesses coming to see me in the morning, did not wait till I had given him an account of what I had done the day before in his favour, in order to know what opinion he at present had of the matter. He said to me with a sorrowful air, that no person in the world had such cause to grieve as he had, and that he had not even the least hopes from my promises and the assistance of my friendship. He told me, that a desire of dispelling some part of his uneasiness having carried him the evening before to the comedy, he there saw Rose, but in a dress so brilliant, that he could not believe she came there without some design; that presently the box, in which she sat at first alone with her brother, was filled by degrees with young Lords, who soon joined in conversation with her; that there came up one to her of a more advanced age, to whom the rest gave place in all appearance out of deference, and that he did not cease one moment from giving her tokens of a lively admiration of her charms; that upon inquiry he was informed that this person was the Duke of — and was assured also that of all the nobles of the court of France, he was the most passionately amorous, and one who least regarded honour or decorum in obtaining his satisfaction: That after the play was over this Lord had, as it appeared to him, offered his coach to Rose: that he was certain she was in it with the Duke and my brother; that he had the curiosity to follow, and saw them alight at the hotel of —, where the Prince of that name gave a great supper, which was to be followed by a ball;  
that

that love or rather jealousy had obliged him to masquerade himself, in order to obtain admittance into the assembly under that disguise; and that during a part of the night, he had seen Rose sparkle, dance, attract the eyes, receive the compliments and flatteries made to her beauty, and to shew upon the whole a great share of complaisance and regard for the Duke, who was not absent from her one moment; that indeed her brother stayed close by her; but as to himself, whose eyes this fatal night had opened, he was but too sensible of an alteration in the inclinations of Rose, and had nothing left to hope from her affections.

The vexation of Mr de Pesses not only inspired me with great compassion for his sufferings, but from a foresight of those things with which I was threatened, I found myself so disturbed and afflicted, that I also began to open my eyes upon the difficulties of the employment I had taken in charge, and of the danger I was in of seeing my advice despised by my brothers and sister. Quarrels and divisions could not fail to be the end of these proceedings; and as a conclusion yet more melancholy, I foresaw, that they were running into libertinism, were about losing sight of the reasons that brought us to France, of forgetting that they could not in any other manner procure a solid establishment, than by their prudence and good conduct; possibly to squander extravagantly the little fortune we had brought with us, and of obliging me in the end to abandon them and return to Coleraine. This was rather a deep penetration into what might happen, than that I had sufficient grounds in reality to carry my foresight and fears already so far; but if one considers as I did then, that after I had engaged to take this voyage to France, without any other motive than an affection for my family, I ought yet to be patient, for that I had hitherto found that tractableness and submission in my brothers and sister, which they had promised me: It was then indeed no way surprising  
that

that I should be piqued to the quick at the change of their manners, and should put so bad a meaning on the first appearances of irregularity in their conduct. I then took a resolution on the spot, to speak plainly to them, and to declare roundly that they should not at all have any dependence on me, if they failed in answering the ideas which they gave me hopes of in Ireland.

I intreated Mr de Pesses to withdraw, to leave me at liberty to execute my design; I immediately sent for them all three, and though I had nothing to apprehend, on the the account of Patrick deserving my reproaches, yet I thought a lecture of morality would not be unprofitable to him. They came to me, and I prayed them, in an obliging tone, to hearken with attention to the important matters I had to lay before them. I began by putting them in mind in what dispositions they were when they made me the first proposal of their voyage to France. You then, said I, had the power of persuading me, that your views were to reconcile the duties of your religion with those of your birth; that is to say, to find out a country, where you might hope to fit yourselves for any preferment without being obliged to quit the faith of your ancestors, for the sake of attaining the favours of fortune; I confess that such a motive might with justice make you wish to abandon your country. As to me, you know what was my end in this adventure; nothing but a tenderness for you, and a regard to the promises made to a dying father. I was calm and undisturbed at Coleraine; ambition did not incite me to any thing that did not square with the duties of my conscience; my fortune was bounded within my own desires. Notwithstanding, I made no difficulty to abandon my employment (the only one perhaps agreeable to my inclinations) to become the head and guide of your enterprizes. This is the title you have forced me to accept, but you cannot forget under what conditions I submitted to consent. The first was, that you should pursue all the paths agreeable

agreeable to honour and religion, that should lead you to some establishment: The second, that you should take nothing in hand without communicating your designs to me, and without having taken my advice. If you had been faithful in observing these two promises, I should have kept close to all mine, and have expected that heaven would have given a blessing to all our enterprizes. But if you are already such as I am ashamed to reproach you, and that you will doubtless blush to hear what I have to say, how do you flatter yourselves that I can approve of your disorders, and maintain the least friendship with you? Without giving them one moment for recollection, I immediately repeated all that I had learned from Mr. de Pesses, and I affected to give an odious turn to circumstances even the most slight and excusable. A young lady, says I to my sister, who in less than fifteen days has turned her back to all decency and modesty, who makes advances in giving herself up to the caresses and flatteries of men, who all at once enters into familiarities with the most leud and debauched lord at court: A young man, continued I, (addressing myself with the same warmth to my brother) who makes himself a minister to the evil inclinations of his sister, who sets open to himself the road to debauchery, who runs headlong to his own perdition, and who hurries away all his family with him down the same precipice: What a strange manner of labouring is this to procure an establishment in France by the road of honour and for the cause of religion! or rather, what a horrible beginning is it to ruin and infamy!

One sees here that my most piercing reproaches fell upon Rose, although George was without doubt the most culpable. But I did not make this difference without a view. The honour of persons of her sex being of a more delicate nature than that of men, it follows that precautions are more necessary to fortify their conduct and reputation. I was well pleased to have terrified my sister with those dreadful images  
of

of vice and infamy, and to have magnified a little her imprudence and mistakes. She was so mortified with my representations, that she shed a torrent of tears, whilst George employed all his wit to give a favourable turn to what had passed between them. He thought, as he told me, according to the project formed by us in Ireland, to marry Rose honourably, or to place her with some lady of distinction; that it was proper she should be seen in the world, and make some acquaintance in it; that he had with this view carried her to take a walk, and from thence to the play; that he could not help her being treated civilly by many persons of quality and honour; that as to what followed, he was ignorant that the Lord mentioned, with whom I had accused him to be in a confederacy, was a debauchee; that indeed, Monsieur the Duke of —— advancing to Rose, and being informed of the name of our family, had made tenders to us of his friendship and service, and proposed to introduce us at the hotel de —— which without doubt is a house one may go into without any shame; that they had been received there with distinction; and that having it before in their thoughts to make acquaintance among people of rank and quality, it was a happiness for them to have found the opportunity so easily; that he applauded himself in particular for having obtained at so little expence the esteem and protection of such a Lord as the Duke of ——, that he had promised to take the interests of our family in hand, and had pushed his goodness and complaisance so far as to inform himself of the detail of our affairs and the place of our abode; in fine, that not seeing any thing in what had passed, which could deserve the name of disorder, of vice or debauchery, he was surprised at the rigour of my treatment, and at the odious appellations with which I had branded his conduct.

If this apology was sincere, it is certain I could not accuse him of any thing but imprudence: It is possible he might have been ignorant of the duke's character,

character, and the danger into which he ran to expose his sister : These thoughts made me a little soften my expressions. I would fain grant, replied I, that your intentions were more excusable, but they do not give me the least room to apprehend that you have not acted indiscreetly at the bottom, seeing those things that might here be made suitable to your interests, have been entirely contrary to the honour of Rose, with whatever prudence she might have conducted herself : What opinion can the world have of a young lady, who in the first step she has made has chose for her guide a young lord, made odious by his vices, who has been presented with his hand, been seen with him in his coach, and familiarly passed a whole night in his conversation ? I must take notice, added I, casting my eyes on Rose, that whether it be with injustice or reason, the world always form their judgments from the first step taken ; possibly a mortal wound is already given to your reputation. Are you ignorant that such a loss can never be repaired ? Besides, if you ever so little reflect on the present situation of our fortune, you may well judge that the work of our establishment is not likely to take its rise from a play or a ball ; if these frivolous occupations are sometimes pardonable, they cannot be so till after you have discharged all other duties ; and the most important of your obligations is to dispose yourselves to attain the favours of heaven by a well-regulated conduct, which may gain you the esteem and protection of people of virtue.

I did not insist upon this detail otherwise than to justify my own conduct, and to shew that there was nothing unreasonable in my complaints, nor too much rigour in my counsels ; nevertheless, I was not successful in inspiring my brother with a relish of them. He was stiff in his opinion, that I ought not at all to condemn him of having profited by such a favourable opportunity, in raising to himself friends and protectors ; and as to what regards the honour of Rose, he maintained with the same obstinacy that she had not  
given

given the least ground for suspicion or detraction, seeing she was in his company, and had comported herself with a reservedness and circumspection becoming her sex.

We parted, not well satisfied with each other. Rose made me some apologies in quitting my chamber, and I had at least the pleasure to believe that she received my advice with more docility than her brother; what had passed did not give me the least suspicion at the bottom, either that any thing was intended contrary to the duties, or that he was less jealous than I of the honour of his sister; but I remarked with some trouble, that our ideas were widely different upon this head; he did not place the honour of a woman in any other thing than an exterior prudence of conduct and behaviour, and was nothing in awe of the censure of men; he thought the reputation of his sister safe, when it was to outward appearances concealed. As to my particular, who looked upon things with another eye, I relied but little upon those virtues that did not derive their sources from a more remote original; and being thoroughly acquainted with the character of Rose, I had reason to fear that her heart was capable of being softened; from whence it would happen, sooner or latter, that notwithstanding her resolution to save appearances, she would betray herself by some weakness, or at least must be under infinite difficulties to maintain the combat in her defence. In reality, I could not form to myself any imagination so frightful, as the condition of an amiable woman, when her heart being by love reduced to a state of weakness, she at the same time perceives the necessity of those laws which compel her to lay her passions under restraint. What state can be more terrible than to be obliged incessantly to do violence to one's self, and to conceal from the eyes of others that poison which she delights to nourish in her own heart?

In order to assure the repose and virtue of Rose for ever, I could then have wished that she had not

Legan

began to have seen the world but by degrees. Her interest not having had less share than that of her brothers, in the resolution I had taken of quitting Ireland; I then had time either to fortify her heart, or at least to arm her with diffidence and precaution. But after our arrival at Paris, George had assumed an ascendant over her, which made me fear that I should find her less tractable, and though he was capable by his vigilance, and counsels, to make her a woman of distinction according to the notions of the world, he was not at all a proper guide to conduct her in the paths of virtue.

Notwithstanding some little resentment which possibly might have remained among us, yet we did not fail at dinner time to shew to each other the usual tokens of our affection. According to custom I retired to my chamber, to pass alone some part of the afternoon. I remained there an hour or two, when I heard the rattling of a coach, which stopped at the gate of our lodging, and the voices of many persons who inquired where my sister was. I put my head out of the window, and saw a gentleman alight magnificently dressed, who was shewn into the house. I did not doubt one moment, but it was the duke of ———. A visit so little foreseen threw me into a great surprise, and I had a difficulty to persuade myself at first, that a girl of the age of Rose could be so bold as to receive it. I waited however till George should find some expedient to dissipate my uneasiness; and that he immediately appearing to receive the duke, should civilly make his sister's excuses to him. All that I expected did not happen. It was indeed George that received the duke; but Rose did not wait to be importuned to make her appearance, and her brother had not the least thought of dissuading her. The conversation lasted above an hour, which appeared to me to be more than four days. I spent all that time in walking at a great rate about my chamber,



ber, which I encompassed backwards and forwards an hundred times, without knowing whether I was standing or sitting: The inquietude, the chagrin, the impatience, and a hundred other agitations which shook me, made this one the most insupportable hour of my whole life.

At length the departure of the duke delivered me from this mortal constraint. I never knew how to dissemble: Whether it was christian charity, tenderness for my sister, or zeal for the honour of my family, that moved me, I hastened down from my chamber with eager steps, and observing much less precaution than I had done the first time, I loaded my brother with reproaches, as piercing as my fears, and as urgent as the danger. I made no scruple in the least of declaring to him, that if I had taken the proceedings of the former day in the most favourable sense, it was no longer possible to be blind to what passed under my own eyes; that this visit of the duke of —— appeared to be concerted; that under whatever pretexts one should endeavour to colour it, it was manifest that a person of that rank would not so much debase himself to come to see a young stranger without wealth, and unknown yet in Paris, if he had not been incited by motives more powerful than civility: and, to explain myself roundly, if he had not views conformable to his vicious inclinations: That I had the shame to penetrate deeper into this mystery of infamy, but let the price of it be what it would, or whatever expedient should be necessary for me to employ, I would assuredly hinder Rose from departing from her duty, and would prevent him from making his sister serve him as a victim to his ambition.

He heard me with great patience, and afterwards appearing to be very much afflicted at the jealousy I had shewn of the honour of his views, he intreated me to do him more justice, and not to believe that the reputation of his sister was less dear to him than to me. He even agreed that the visit of the duke

duke had with reason given me displeasure ; and he protested that, far from contributing the least in the world to it, he had taken infallible measures to prevent its being renewed for the time to come. But after giving me this sort of satisfaction, with which I began to be contented, I was extremely surprised to find him change his tone and style. My brother, says he, with an air of prudence, which he knew how to affect better than any man living, will you permit me at present to open to you plainly my thoughts? I have a thousand reasons that bind me to that respect and friendship which I pay you ; and I shall discharge these two duties all my life. But I do not know whether I can promise you the same docility in other points. I have reflected on the reproaches with which you were pleased to overwhelm me this morning, and the more I examine myself, the less I find I have deserved them. We do not at all consider things in the same point of view : You are a churchman, a venerable divine ; and I confess, if my sister and I were destined to the same state, we could not do better than to conduct ourselves by your maxims. But our birth and inclinations have devoted us to the world, and this vocation demands a conduct intirely different. Do you believe me capable, with the few talents which you know I have, to distinguish for the present what is suitable to my honour and fortune? I am of an age, continued he, in which I have not even one moment to lose, if I would arrive to any thing in the world. My sister ought also to think of setting herself forward, or renounce all those advantages she might hope to draw from her youth and beauty. Do you distrust her chastity? This is to have a very evil opinion of her. As to me, whom without doubt it concerns as much as you, to be sensible of the honour of our house, I repose myself intirely on her own virtue ; and if she should happen to be so base as to dishonour us, I do not fear saying in her presence, that all  
my

my tenderness should not stop me from piercing her heart. Place your confidence therefore, added he, both upon her and upon me, and do not oppose yourself to the success of our affairs, in condemning the only means that can bring them to a good issue.

This discourse, which without doubt George had meditated at leisure, and for which he expected applause at the close of it, served for no other purpose than to excite my compassion. I made haste to shew him his weakness, in giving him to understand, that he reasoned from a false principle; that the great difference he put between an ecclesiastical state, and that of a man of the world, was in effect nothing, since they were but two different ways of fulfilling the same duties; that a man of the world and a man of the church were two christians, of whom the one was not less obliged than the other to the hatred of vice, and the practice of virtue; that in truth their exterior occupations did not bear any resemblance to each other; but that without being the same, they ought to govern themselves by the same principle, which is the necessity of pleasing God, and of saving their souls: In one word, that there is no condition of life wherein we are not obliged to eschew the occasions of sin, and consequently that the observations of my maxims were as necessary for his sister and him, as for me. If it be possible, added I, that having received a christian education, you should not be sensible of the truth of what I have said, judge what disservice you will do your sister in conducting her without precautions into the middle of dangers. She may perish in them, and her disasters shall be your handy-work. You say, you will pierce her heart, if she forgets her duty. Strange remedy! do not you see, that it supposes her ruin already consummated, and that the question only is to find out one that may prevent it? Do not precipitate any thing; it is the only favour I request of you. Give your sister time  
to

to observe the precipices that surround her; she shall not tumble down them however, without having seasonable information, that she might have avoided them; do not go in quest of opportunity, but leave them to start of themselves. This is one of the requisites for a man of the world. I know it well; but religion diminishes the danger, when it sufficiently provides, that we should not expose ourselves to it but with regret; it is always the most dangerous, when we run into it voluntarily.

This conversation, which continued a long time, and in which I attacked the miserable principles of George with the more powerful arms of christianity, made no impression on his mind; and he gave me to understand by all his answers, that he thought himself superior to my little fears; that his religion was honour; between which two, if he put any difference, it was not at all for the advantage of religion, seeing it was by his false ideas of honour that he explained the law and duties of religion. Upon our parting, we found our sentiments had so little conformity, that he treated my arguments as monastick scruples; and having threatened to quit them and return to Coleraine, he answered me coldly, that he had no design at all to oppose my departure.

I endured (without complaining) so cruel a token of the cooling of his affections. He went away the same evening to Saint Germain en Laye, where we had some days before agreed that he should pay a visit to Mr Mahony, Mr Dillon, and some other gentlemen, who were kinsmen or friends to our house. I was informed after his departure, that he had held a long conversation with his sister in private, and that he had given order to two domestics, who served us, to watch the next day at the gate of our lodgings, to receive the duke of ———, if he took the fancy to come again, and to acquaint him civilly that Rose was gone with him to Saint Germain. This precaution gave me some pleasure, and left me  
in

in a better state of tranquillity. I did not fail to lay hold of the opportunity of his absence to repeat my exhortations to my sister. She listened to me with great sweetness and submission. Having perceived, the day following, that some women attended her with several sorts of cloaths and head-dresses, I took occasion to ask her, in what use she intended to employ so many idle trifles. I thought this question embarrassed her. Nevertheless, as she had a heart incapable of disguise, she told me, after a superficial preamble, in which she alledged George's pleasure for an excuse, that she was engaged to go with him to a ball, to be given two or three days after at the house of the duke of ———, and that to prepare herself with some decency, she was providing proper dresses for it. The loss (as I took it) of one of our family gave me less affliction than this new misfortune. I placed before her eyes, with more ardour than ever all that she had to fear from those dangerous assemblies at the age she then was, with so little knowledge of the world, and the snares which were going to be set for her innocence. I conjured her to be sensible of the welfare of her soul; to take some time at least to prepare for her passage from a life, such as she had hitherto led, to that in which she was willing unhappily to engage herself; not to leap over in one moment all bounds, to the hazard of being abandoned by heaven, whose assistance she had neglected to implore, and who plainly would not give her leave to take such unwarrantable and rash steps. In fine, if my prayers and instances were not sufficient, I declared that I would add to them my orders; and that by the right which my profession, my age, and my quality of seniority gave me, I commanded her absolutely to renounce this dancing party, and not to stir out of the lodging without my permission.

Whatever pain I endured in finding myself necessitated to employ so harsh a remedy, yet I thought it indispensable, and I did not in the least doubt but it would produce the effect I proposed to myself. This

thought eased my inquietude, and I imagined it left even Rose in a better state of tranquillity; therefore not doubting but that this little sacrifice would not cost her heart much trouble, I thought it would be a cruelty to fatigue her further with my morals: George arrived from Saint Germain two days after. I received him without affectation; and pretending not to think farther of what had passed, I entertained him with nothing but what related to his journey, and left to Rose the care of informing him of what changes had happened in his absence. They did not wait long to meet in private, having taken up the custom of doing so for some time; for Patrick had not entered for a long time into their schemes. After a discourse of some moments, George went to his sister's chamber, and a little after out of our lodgings. He returned about an hour after in a hackney coach, and having alighted, did not stay in the house longer than was necessary to pack up his and his sister's cloaths, with half the money which we had brought out of Ireland, and accompanied by Rose, whom he led by the hand, he went into the coach with her, and they instantly drove off from our quarter.

He left a note for me at the gate, which was brought to me unsealed. It contained but three lines, "Irritated, said he, by the tyranny with which I had treated him and his sister, he had chose to settle himself in another place with her, and to observe a strict justice, had made an equal division of our money, of which he had left a moiety for Patrick and for me."

I returned to my chamber to read it, and waited till supper time with impatience to be informed of the particular manner in which George had taken the prohibition I had laid on Rose. As nothing was so remote from my thoughts as a treachery of this nature, my jealousy had not been applied to that quarter: Insomuch that my surprise, my grief, and my confusion being more extreme at the reading of this fatal

fatal billet, I lifted up my eyes and hands to heaven. O God, cried I, is this a reward for the tenderness which I always bore them! Ingrates! Have they then reserved this recompence for all my cares and affection? I found myself so moved, that the tears gushed from my eyes, and I was for some moments incapable of forming any resolution.

When I was a little recovered from this first disorder, I thought I had not two choices to make, but that without further consideration I should return immediately to Coleraine. What motive could there be to slay me at Paris? They have a mind to destroy themselves, says I: They have shook off the yoke; and if they have had nothing but scorn for the holy maxims with which I have laboured to inspire them, What way remains for me to take to reclaim them to their duty? No, I will return into Ireland, I will go and devote myself to the welfare of my flock. That field is not too vast for my zeal, and my pains there will not be repaid with ingratitude and perfidy. I confirmed myself the more in this resolution from the knowledge I had of the sweet and pliant temper of Patrick, and did not in the least doubt but he would freely consent to close with me in returning to our country. I hoped at least to preserve one branch of my unfortunate family, and not to appear at the tombs of my fathers without offering to them some pure remains of their blood.

For so long a time as I continued agitated by these first motions, I could not but applaud my design of quitting France; and I communicated my resolutions to Patrick, who did not shew any aversion to the proposal I made him of accompanying me. But when my blood began to cool, I looked on things with a quite different eye. I recalled to my mind all the reasons which had appeared powerful enough to determine me to leave Coleraine, and follow my brothers and sister into France. Were these reasons changed by their ill conduct? Or rather was not this a new addition to them, that made my first resolutions more strong? If

I had thought the obligations of nature more sacred than those of my employment, if I had been torn away for some time from the cares of my flock, by the sole view of steering my brothers towards some honourable and profitable end, and to instruct them in keeping wide of the high-road too open to vice; in fine, if I had regarded them as the most dear of my neighbours, even in considering them with the eyes of faith, and according to the rules and precepts of the gospel, Ought I to renounce these sentiments at a time that I saw them on the brink of ruin? And should not the danger to which they were exposed prove more capable than ever to warm my zeal? They stood on a precipice, And should my charity to others suffer me to see them perish? What then were my views at the time I made so many efforts to prevent their falling?

I found myself intirely changed after these reflections; all my tenderness for my brother and sister returned to awaken my zeal. I perceived at the same time springing up in my heart so lively an anguish for the interests of their souls, that I could not take one moment's repose all night; my blood boiled in my veins, and nothing was so tedious to me as my bed. I found by experience, that zeal is in reality a devouring fire, and especially when it is joined to a natural tenderness for one's relations; and that the heart always feels the impression of these two causes. Far then from thinking any more of abandoning them, I resolved to renew my ardour for inspiring them with a taste of virtue; to go in quest of them into whatsoever place they had retired to; to endure their coldness, their repulses, even their slights and injuries, rather than renounce the hopes of giving them a relish for my advice; in fine, I resolved to make their safety the perpetual object of my vigilance and cares; and if I should not be so happy as to snatch them out of the arms of vice, at least I should prevent their surrendering themselves up to it without remorse.



I employed myself in nothing more than the means of executing this resolution. But in meditating upon the difficulties of my enterprise, I conceived that after the step that George had taken, and above all with such confidence as he had in his own understanding, I could not well hope to win him over suddenly by the force of my reasons. He was moreover of an age which could give me no pretence of obliging him to regulate his conduct by the counsels of another, nor make him look upon any deference that I expected from him as a duty. Nevertheless, the danger of his sister was pressing; for I had figured to myself already, that having the liberty of following her inclinations, she had every moment need of the extraordinary succour of heaven, to prevent her making a bad use of it. This thought started in me a very bold resolution, which was to run away with my sister from George, and oblige her to come under the yoke in spite of herself: yet I proposed to treat her with so much sweetness and complaisance, that she should have no reason to complain of my conduct. As it was impossible to execute this project without help, I opened myself to Patrick and Mr de Pesses, who was mortally grieved at her flight, and wasted himself away with vexation and love. I had no trouble in bringing them both to enter into my views. They immediately undertook to discover the place which George had chose for his residence, and I went about taking the necessary measures for executing our purpose, against the time they should come to that knowledge.

This was no very easy enterprize in a city of such extent as Paris. They employed themselves for some days with great but unsuccessful zeal. At length by mere chance, Patrick fell upon the track of his brother. He accosted him civilly, and the other affected some surprise in seeing him still at Paris. How, says he, after the forwardness the dean shewed to return to Coleraine, and from the great affection which I knew you had for him, Could I believe that you two could

part ? Patrick answered plainly that we should have been sorry to have left Paris without knowing at least what was become of him and Rose. How ! Are you ignorant of that ? replied he in the same tone ; know then, that I have got a comission of captain of foot, and that I am obliged for it to the duke of ——— who employed his interest with the minister in my favour. As to Rose, added he, she as yet has had no change in her condition ; but I hope opportunities will soon offer in her favour, and that we have made the best choice. Then attempting to gain over Patrick by the views of his own interest, he represented to him, that he was in the wrong not to follow his example, and to flatter himself that fortune would go in search of him under my gown, and of herself offer him her favours ; that indeed my intentions were commendable, and that he had not the least doubt of my zeal and friendship ; but that having all my life pored my eyes upon books, he looked upon me as the most improper person that could be thought of to regulate their conduct and establishment in the world ; that his view nevertheless, in taking the step he had done, was not to break with us entirely, nor to abandon us with the little means he had left behind him ; that his fortune taking a very happy course, and not apprehending but his success would daily increase, he proposed, as soon as his affairs would permit it, to offer us his house, and to share with us the fruits of his good luck and industry ; that in the mean time, if Patrick had the least regard to his own good, he would sometimes come and take his advice, from whence he would draw more profit than from mine.

If I had been a witness to this ensnaring conversation, I should have had strong apprehensions that it would have made too great an impression on the principles of Patrick. But thanks to the excellence of his character, it did not in the least change his sentiments. He contented himself with making many acknowledgments for the kind offers of his brother, and fearing to give him some mistrust, should he be too cu-

rious inquiring after his abode, he parted with him in the same place where they met. Nevertheless, he took care to follow him with his eyes, being resolved not to let him go out of view till he had seen him enter his lodging, and not to return to us till he had got information of what he sought after. The report of what he had discovered of George could not fail to fill me with joy. If I was pleased to hear that fortune had already done something in his favour, the means, by which she had effected it, appeared to me to be suspicious, and I had some anxiety in conceiving from whence this ardour of the duke of —, to take in hand the interests of a stranger, should proceed. It was not but that I had the most high idea of the vast politeness and generosity of the French Lords, but I could have wished to have had no fear of attributing such unexpected favours to any thing else than this cause. Nevertheless, I took courage from knowing that Patrick was acquainted with the place where Rose lived, and I began to think seriously of the means to deceive the vigilance of George. Mr de Pesses left us as soon as he heard the account Patrick gave, underpretence of going to observe the situation of my sister's lodgings, and to see if nothing might offer to serve us in our designs, but at the bottom to satisfy his impatience of approaching and seeing her. He returned towards the evening, at the time that I was eagerly meditating on the part I had to take.

He had got a sight of Rose, and his joy in having seen her continued yet to sparkle in his eyes. He told us, that having past some time in the neighbourhood of the house, he had seen her go abroad with her brother, and that he was dazzled with her finery and beauty. He would have made us a description of them, which I prayed him to shorten. That having seen them get into a coach, he followed them to get information of their design. They alighted at the Hotel de Carnavallet, which lay in the same quarter; and inquiring of the coachman, he was

told, that a number of persons of quality were to sup there, and that afterwards there was to be a great ball, to which masquers were to be admitted upon giving in their names at the gate. I admired at the blindness of George, who seemed to take pleasure in administering poison to his sister, and in chusing by design opportunities the most dangerous to her innocence. What could he have thought of more fatal, if he had hated her, than to search out expedients for her destruction? But while I was lamenting his conduct, heaven inspired me with the desire of punishing him, in taking away Rose, even out of the midst of her pleasures. The project, the means, all presented themselves to my mind in the same moment. I was but little acquainted with the customs of balls; but I imagined that an assembly so numerous could not be conducted without some confusion, especially when they began to admit the masquers. I persuaded Patrick and Mr de Pesses to masque themselves and go to the ball. Write a note, says I to Patrick, to be delivered to your sister, when you come to the gate of the hotel, to pray her to have you introduced. If she comes to receive you herself, that will answer my views. But as it is to be feared, that she will send another to receive you, let Mr de Pesses wait at the gate, and when you are introduced yourself, intreat your sister in private to leave the room for a moment to do the same service for Mr de Pesses, who you may make her believe is absolutely refused entrance. I shall be myself at the gate, in a coach, and I will take upon me the conduct of all the rest. If she advises you to address yourself to your brother, you may say to her, that you would willingly leave him in ignorance that you are so near him, and that you expect this piece of service from herself.

For the better understanding this waggish enterprise, into which I had engaged too lightly, if I had not belived that the end of it was of importance, I ought to acquaint the reader, that the Romish ecclesiastics

clerics not having a liberty in Ireland, no more than in England, to wear the habit peculiar to their function, I was still dressed as they are upon common occasions, that is to say, in a short coat without any thing to distinguish me from a lay-man. I had waited to put on a new canonical garb, when our affairs should be placed in such a certain situation as not to leave me room to doubt of our establishment in France. I would then, without any injury to decorum, appear at midnight at the hotel de Carnallet. As to the hope of carrying off Rose with few measures and precautions, it was founded only on my knowledge of her character, and her disposition to pay me respect. I was convinced that she would not give me the trouble of using violence, when she heard my voice, and received an absolute command to follow me. So that I was perfectly easy about the success of my design.

In reality, it succeeded as happily as I had hoped. The crowd and confusion was not so great at the ball as I had expected; but I observed that this was an advantage to our enterprise; because possibly fear might have prevented Rose from leaving the room. A pistole to the porter obtained me an entrance into the court. Rose appeared with Patrick at the door of the apartment, and while she was giving orders to some domestics to make room for Mr de Pesses, I presented myself to her with an air the least apt to throw her into a fright. I took hold of her hands with a great deal of sweetness, and pressing them tenderly, my dear sister, says I, be not alarmed at seeing me, I shall trouble you but one moment. I am not come here to give you any vexation, or offer you any violence; you are free, you are mistress of yourself. But if the fear of God has yet touched your heart, if the remembrance of your father, the honour of your family, and your own sentiments, have yet any power over you, give me the satisfaction of seeing you this day return to your duty. See your brother Patrick, who conjures you to the same thing.

come: Your flight hath given us a mortal grief; there is nothing but your return can comfort us. I was silent, after having pronounced these words with much eagerness. She took some moments to answer. In the end, opening her mouth with a deep sigh, O heaven! says she, to what will you force me! I answered quickly, to nothing, my dear Rose. It is on yourself alone, that your honour, your virtue, your repose must at this time depend. Come, says I, come my dear Rose, I'll fall at your knees to conjure you, if my prayers and my tears are not enough to touch your heart. She raised some objections upon the disquiet into which we were going to throw her brother. I assured her I would take the pains of providing for every thing. Half consenting and half irresolute, I led her towards the gate, and without losing a moment, we all four got into the coach in waiting for us, and I ordered it to drive towards St. Anthony's gate, and to set us down at Saisons. This was the name of the country house that I purchased from Mr de Lezan.

I applauded myself extremely on my good fortune and success, and during our little journey, I considered Rose (whom I had happily stolen away, and was now carrying off in triumph) like a victim gorgeously adorned, as a sacrifice to her virtue. As to her, an air of thoughtfulness and a few sighs that stole from her heart against her will, made me judge plainly enough, that she did not follow me without regret. Mr de Pesses endeavouring to make her a little more chearful, by addressing her with some discourses of gallantry and flattery, she gave him no little grief by her harsh answers and frappish behaviour. I pretended not to have perceived it, being sufficiently satisfied with the submission she had shewed me, and I did not doubt but a little quiet would restore her former sweetness. The next morning I wrote a few lines to George, to prevent his being alarmed. The purport of my letter was not at all insulting, but apprising him that his sister had voluntarily returned to her duty. I exhorted him to  
reap

reap some advantage by his age and experience, so as not altogether to iwerve from his own. " My design; " (says I to him) has not hitherto been to constrain " your inclinations, nor to force you by violence to " follow my counsels ; it is a friend, who would make " himself useful to your happiness ; it is a brother, " who makes his own interests yours ; it is a father, " and a spiritual pastor, who has nothing more dear " nor more precious than you ; for all these titles " give me a claim to your respect. Why then do you " rebel against my tenderness, and fly me as your " enemy ? Why then did you take from me your " sister, over whom you have not as yet any rights " so great as I am capable of making title to ? those " rights which I have received from nature, by the " order of my birth, and those which our common " father cast upon me in his dying moments. I fear " to remind you of those circumstances, which have " caused you much disgrace. Remember only, that " it is not much more than one year, since death " robbed us of this good father ; and ask yourself, " how you could so soon lose the reverence that you " eternally owed to his memory." I added, that if my letter and his own reflections should revive in him the desire of living well with me, he might be assured of finding me little sensible of what had passed, and that he should be received at Seasons with the friendship that I owed him, and which nothing should be able to make me forget. I complimented him also upon the favours which he had lately received at court, and exhorted him to conduct himself under them in such a course, as may render a man of honour content with his fortune.

He sent me an answer out of hand. His resentment, though disguised, made him discover it in every word ; he lamented Rose, for being condemned to that kind of life, to which I had now led her ; that I intended, in all appearance, to marry her to a wine merchant, or some peasant ; that these things were far removed from the intentions of his father, to which I set up a title with so much application,

and as distant from the views which we ought to have proposed to ourselves in coming to France. But he ceased pretending any interest in his sister, since I had assured him in such strong terms, that he had no right over her; and for the lot to which I had destined her, he confessed that she was much better in my hands than his. As to the proposal of living well with me, if I intended thereby, living without hate and resentment, he protested to me, that he was sincerely disposed to it; but if I spoke of beginning again to live with me under the same roof, he could by no means see the necessity of it, nor even that it would be of any advantage for him or me. Moreover, he wished me all manner of prosperity, and should remain with his usual affection, &c.

As I did not at all expect, that he could be insensible to the sort of affront I had done him, I resolved to give his anger time to calm, and to rest myself, as to our reconciliation, upon the goodness of his nature. Two days after he sent me, by the hands of a notary, half the sum which he had carried away when he left us; with a note, in which he prayed me to receive it in the name of Rose, to whom it appertained, and to acknowledge by an instrument, that it was paid to me. I consented to his request, and charged the notary to tell him from his sister, from Patrick, and from me, that to purchase the pleasure of seeing him again, and of living in a good understanding with him, we would willingly sacrifice not only this sum, but all the money that was in our hands.



---

B O O K H.

---

THE pains I was at in improving our habitation, and the share of it I committed to Rose, by consulting her on every particular that might please her, dissipated in a short time her chagrin for quitting Paris. She did herself at least a good deal of violence in disguising it; and a recovery so prompt and ready ought to have given me some suspicion: But I affected to believe her sincere, being satisfied enough, to see that she was capable of assuming a little power over herself. Her indifference for Mr de Pesses increased every day; and I advised this young man to moderate his passion, and to wait a return from time, of which he had no reason yet to despair. It is true, that with the desire of exempting my sister from lesser troubles, that I might not give her room to repent the deference she had shewn me, Mr de Pesses had entered into new views from the advice I had given him. The reason I had for approving his love having been the interest of Rose, whereof I believed I could not secure her a settlement too soon, I found myself a little cooled by her repugnance. I could not but own that inequality of birth was a just objection. It appeared to me, nevertheless, that that defect was balanced by the circumstances of our fortune; but even that stood upon a supposition that inclination should help to diminish the difficulty; for people do not marry precisely for riches, and for no other end, and I could have wished above all things to see my sister happy.

These

These reflections at first sight served to revive my resentments against George, whom I accused for causing my sister to lose the relish which she formerly had for Mr de Pesses. She was accustomed to see him; her propension towards him would have gained strength, and she would have been brought of herself to receive his tenders. Nevertheless, I considered also, that he had not hitherto made any great progress in her heart, since an absence of a few days had ruined his pretensions. A young man flatters himself from the smallest appearances, and interprets every thing in his own favour. A young lady of the age of Rose, who has no precaution, because she wants experience, sometimes gives advantages over herself, without knowing it. Her frankness does not give her room to think of consequences, and self-love in men figures to themselves every success they can desire. In fine, although Mr de Pesses entertained me every day with his love and sufferings, I resolved to limit my good offices to the single act of consoling his grief.

His passion became so violent, that being seized with a dangerous fit of sickness, I thought it could not be attributed to any other cause. We spared neither pains nor cost to re-establish his health, and even Rose appeared to interest herself in it with a zeal that surprised me. This gave me room to conclude, that some change had been wrought in her heart, and I could not conceal my satisfaction. She answered me with great openness, that the sole motive of her care was gratitude and acknowledgment. I esteem him, says she, I am convinced he loves me, and I think what I do for him is a debt. This answer seemed to me to carry so little appearance of probability, that I took up a quite different idea of her sentiments. But she confirmed them some days after in a manner that cured all my suspicions. Mr de Pesses had intreated me the first days of his sickness to signify his situation to his parents, and I hastened to satisfy him. Although I sufficiently weighed the terms of my letter, so as not to give them any false alarm, yet a just uneasiness for the  
health.

health of an only son made his father immediately set out, and he arrived at Saisons. He was a venerable old man, and his appearance at first sight declared all those good qualities which he had communicated to his son. I left them together, and their conversation lasted about an hour. In the end, having prayed me to come to them, the father urged me in the most tender terms to save the life of his son, in granting him what he loved more than himself. He told me, that he knew with what vast respect and distance it became him to demand this favour in behalf of a young man, who was so very inferior to us in birth, and who had no other foundation for hope than his infinite tenderness for Rose, and the friendship with which we had honoured him. But if the gifts of fortune could supply other wants, he would oblige himself to give his son the value of two hundred thousand livres in land and money, and to lay out twenty thousand crowns in purchasing an employment for him. I interrupted him with assurances, that the inclinations I had for his son being always the same, he might depend upon my consent ; and that I would charge myself with making these new proposals to my sister. I ordered her to be called, not in the least doubting upon the matter, but that the offer of such a present fortune would determine her in his favour out of hand. She listened attentively to my discourse, but far from flattering either father or son with the least hopes, she protested civilly, that she had not yet entertained any other sentiments for him than those of gratitude and friendship. Whatever rigour Mr de Pesses might discover in this declaration, yet he had such a sense of her care and diligence about him during his sickness, that he recovered against all hopes.

I own, after this proof of the indifference of Rose, every point of her conduct became a riddle to me. I could not conceive from what motives a person of her age and constitution should so obstinately refuse an amiable young man, of whose love she was convinced, and to whom she did not declare any aver-  
sion ;

sion: for after this new testimony of his passion from the violence of his distemper, I found in her more complaisance and respect for him than before; and I had taken the good understanding between them for the proof of a mutual love, if the chagrin of Mr de Pesses had not obliged me to make a different judgment. I signified as much with astonishment to Patrick, who had not yet shewed any opposition to the designs of Mr de Pesses, and who seemed to be more affectionate than ever to his sister since our residence at Saïsons. He made me an answer so vague and indeterminate, and with an air of so much constraint, that I might have conceived some distrust, if I had been less acquainted with his character: but I believed him to be intirely taken up with his melancholy, his books, and the perpetual alterations he was making in the garden and the house. I depended too much upon him, and could never imagine that a mind and a heart so excellent could be capable of deceiving.

During the whole course of my life nothing has contributed so much to my errors and difficulties as this credulous bias in maintaining too favourable an opinion of the virtue of others; and in thinking, by a little study and search into the bottom of a character, to discover the natural principles of integrity, and the inclinations to good. I had not any commerce with the grand passions by experience of my own; and without this key one cannot perfectly enter into the knowledge of the heart of man, which consists only in an acquaintance with the effects of the passions. How can we conceive with a sedate heart, that it contains impulses capable of making us forget those duties which we love, and which we cannot even think of violating without remorse? after this manner I always reposed a confidence in the character of another very near as much as in my own; and whenever I chanced to become the bubble of these notions, I loved rather to charge the error to my own account, in believing I had deceived myself in the judgment I had made, than to accuse virtue of inconstancy.

constancy or weakness. These are false ideas, which suppose in men an excess of goodness or wickedness, and withal an invariable steadfastness and constancy in either, of which human nature is rarely capable. The example of Patrick has helped more to my instruction than all my own reasonings and knowledge.

He was such as I have painted him; but among a thousand excellent qualities he had two, the least excess of which might change into vices. The one was, that complaisance which made him agreeable in conversation, but which incessantly exposed him to be misled by the counsels and examples of his acquaintance. The other was, a perpetual uneasiness to himself, which wanted to be settled, and which made him lay hold without discernment on every thing that carried an appearance of promising his heart that repose of which he was in search. These two enemies of his happiness and virtue had already engaged him in more than one false step. Nevertheless, these outward appearances had already imposed on me. To the surprise I had remarked to him, he contented himself to answer, that not being the guarantee of his sister's inclinations, he was of opinion only that she ought neither to be constrained nor importuned; but that after the manner she had declared herself, there was little appearance that she could change her sentiments. He added, that since all our projects of marrying her had thus failed, he did not know whether it was agreeable to decency to suffer *Mir de Pesses* to continue so long with her. This advice was insinuated so dexterously, that it made an impression on me. I agreed that the reputation of *Rose* demanded some caution and address. *Mir de Pesses* had been near six months at *Saisons*. I was resolved to give him warning to remove, with all the openness and candour of friendship; that so long an abode with us, when his pretensions were not likely to terminate in a marriage, might be subject to evil constructions; that I was convinced his politeness and respect for me would make him stifle the murmurs of his heart. In reality, after some complaints

complaints of his misfortunes, he confessed that my scruples were just, and took the resolution of retiring to Paris. I could by no means refuse him the permission he requested, of coming often to see us. Patrick had during this time made many little journeys, sometimes at my request, and sometimes out of views of his own. I had importuned him to go often to St. Germain, and reproached myself for never having been yet there. My intention had always been to procure ourselves to be introduced to king James by some of our friends, and I had cast my eyes on Mr de Sercine, whom that Prince honoured with his confidence. But I ardently wished that George would accompany us, and waited with impatience that he should make some advances toward a reconciliation. I had given it in charge to Patrick not only to dispose Mr de Sercine to do us the service I expected from him, but also to bring about some interview with his brother, and to represent to him, of what importance it would be for us to live in a better understanding together, and to sue for in concert the king's protection for our family. As I never recommended any commissions with so much zeal as I did these to him, it surprised me to see with what coldness he gave me an account of the execution of them; but I attributed his supineness to his natural humour, and took the resolution of going myself to St. Germain, where I saw Mr de Sercine, and Mr Dillian, for the first time. They did not receive me like a person unknown; George had taken care to give them a picture of my miserable figure; they even saluted me by my name, although I was not introduced to either of them but under the title of an Irish ecclesiastic. But if I found myself nothing but a subject for laughter, in the first circumstances of my two visits, I was heavily concerned to find myself treated with a coldness which I did not expect. With much ado, they got out some compliments of services; all their entertainment turned upon the merit of my two brothers, and the marks of his favour which the

the king was pleased to give them. They mentioned also the beauty of my sister, and with what impatience she was expected at the court of St. Germain.

The fear of being turned into a new ridicule, by demanding the explanation of a discourse, of which I did not comprehend one word, made me shorten my compliments. I retired with a good deal of vexation, and instead of passing eight days at St. Germain, as I proposed, I thought of nothing but making the best of my way to Saïsons. It behoved me to clear up speedily what I had heard. I thought in general, that I had been betrayed by Patrick, and made a sport of by the ill-judged prudence of George. But what ought I to think of Rose? The interest of that dear sister gave me a mortal alarm. I arrived at Saïsons, intirely taken up with my fears. As I had left home but the evening before, they were far from expecting my return so soon.

In entering the court, I saw some lackeys in liveries, with which I was not acquainted, two coaches and some horses which the servants were saddling. I advanced towards the house; they discovered me; and I heard a vast clattering and racket in drawing down windows and shutting chamber-doors with the greatest precipitation. I found some difficulty in believing my ears and my eyes. What do they mean? says I; would they intirely shut me out of my house? I entered. Not one person came to receive me. I immediately went up to my apartment, without having power to clear up what I already thought so fatal, nor even to call one of our servants. For I came home unattended and on foot, having discharged at Paris the St. Germain stage-coach.

I remained some moments in a profound silence, during which I was meditating on what manner they would probably conduct themselves to me. At last I heard Patrick's voice, who asked some of the servants where I was? He then came to my chamber. I was sitting with my head leaning on my hand. I did not quit this posture, and without  
even

even opening my eyes I waited with a great deal of affliction for somebody to explain to me what I had to hope or fear; for my first suspicions had fallen on George, and I well imagined that it could be no body but he, who came to carry away his sister from me. My silence, and the tokens I shewed of a lively affliction, touched the tender-hearted Patrick. He continued like one in doubt, whether he ought to open his mouth. I lifted up my eyes on him; my first look made him blush. In fine, the goodness of his temper prevailed over all his projects; he told me ingenuously, that he knew the cause of my chagrin, and that he was ashamed to have deceived me.

And you too, O Patrick! interrupted I him with a deep sigh. Alas! what have you then done? what reason have you to distrust me? He acknowledged he was guilty, and promised to make a confession of all his faults. But that which presses hardest now, says he, that embarrassment in which you found us upon your arrival, and in which I yet remain, is this; my brother is here, and I am engaged to favour his design of carrying Rose to Paris. She has consented to it; and I fear you will not be able to make an opposition, without drawing on yourself some new vexation. I pressed him to explain himself more at large. He confessed to me, that in the first motions of surprise and confusion, into which my unexpected return had cast them, George had commanded him with a fierce air to come and declare to me, that he was resolved not to be twice my dupe, and that if I attempted to detain Rose, I should oblige him against his inclinations to the commital of some violence. What side shall I take? says he to me; I always thought I had engaged myself imprudently, but I had not power to defend myself against his instances, nor to resist some promises he made me.

Although I was sensible of all the difficulties of my situation, I was so well satisfied to see Patrick return to his duty and my interests, that I forth-  
with



with resumed hopes. I put off all other questions, till we should be under more quiet circumstances; and thinking on nothing but the present evil, I asked him, If George was alone? He told me that he had with him three ladies, and two gentlemen, to one of whom he intended to marry Rose. A new temerity this, which raised in me as much grief as astonishment. Marry Rose! cried I, to whom then? and by what right does he pretend to dispose of her hand without my knowledge, and without my approbation? He answered quickly, that I ought not to be alarmed; for as to what regarded this marriage, George had taken no step in it, but by the advice and approbation of all our friends and relations at St Germain; that the king himself had given his consent, and that the match was equally honourable and advantageous for our sister. Every word of so strange an account augmented my surprise and consternation. But, replies I, with a voice disordered by resentment, am I then looked upon as a cypher? Do you in such a point as this set at nought my tenderness, my character, and the rights of my age? Moreover, to marry the girl without consulting her, without her knowledge, without her seeing the husband destined for her! He interrupted me by an assurance, that in relation to me, they had resolved to inform me of all the amour before the celebration of the marriage; and that as to the lover, he had visited Rose so often in company with George since our residence at Saïsons, that she had time to know him, and to have for him an high esteem.

It was impossible that this last stroke should fail to make me know what a wretched May-game I had been to them since our departure from Paris. I demanded no other explanation, and taking my aim without deliberation, I prayed Patrick to inform his brother, that I impatiently desired a word with him in private. He agreed to satisfy me, under a promise not to reveal the confidence he had put in me, in relation to the departure of Rose. But I

was

was as much surpris'd as at all the rest, to see him return sorrowful to tell me, that George absolutely refused to see me, unless I would promise to consent to the departure of my sister, and to live in friendship with him for the time to come. Heaven! cried I, lifting up my eyes, you are witness on whom the peace depends at this time. But I will go myself to him, since he refuses to come to me.

I went down the same moment, and notwithstanding the agitation of all my thoughts, I received so much strength from heaven, as to assume a calm and composed air. I entered into the apartment, where they expected nothing less than to see me, after the timorousness they observed in my seeking to be alone upon my arrival. George appeared to be disconcerted, Rose trembled, and all the spectators, who were not ignorant of the situation of affairs, and who had a part or counterplot to act, seemed to be under a kind of embarrassment. But when I had opened my mouth to unfold myself with moderation, all the resolution I had gathered abandoned me at the sight of Mr de Sercine, on whom I by chance cast my eyes. This was the same gentleman, whom I had seen that very morning at St. Germain; our near relation, an aged man, a courtier, who had the reputation of having a great stock of wisdom and experience. I found all of a sudden, from the complaisance he had shewn in accompanying George, the cause of his cold reception of me, and I confess that his presence, and my calling this to mind, had at once froze my blood. He perceived that my confusion had tied my tongue, and taking up the discourse himself, he intreated me not to take offence, that his zeal for our house, and his friendship for my brothers and sister, had made him enter into some measures, which were indeed taken without my participation, but that they ought not to alarm my wisdom and piety; that of all the persons I saw in my house, there was not one from whom I  
might

might not expect all sorts of opportunities of doing me friendship and service; that that was his spouse, and these his two daughters, with my lord Linch, a young gentleman of great hopes, who had contracted a strict friendship with my brothers, and who had yet sentiments more tender for my sister; that the retreat to which I had confined Patrick and Rose being an unpromising way to advance them in the world, and the state of our affairs not permitting us to make a better choice, he came here with all the affection of a relation and a friend to offer them his house and his credit at court; that Rose should not meet with a less agreeable reception than my brothers, who already had the honour of being presented to the king; that this prince wished ardently to see Rose, from the description which my lord Linch had given him of her: in fine, that he came to take her, with his wife and daughters, to conduct her to Paris, where she should pass some days to provide cloaths, and from thence to St. Germain, where she was expected: As to myself, if I persisted in my inclination for solitude, I might reside quietly at Saisons, and that all the friends of our family would employ their interests to obtain me a benefice or some other provision of a churchman.

Having had time to recollect myself during this discourse, I conceived that my complaints, my objections, and my scruples, would be little hearkened unto, and that they would not wait for my consent to execute the project they had formed without consulting me. The indifference shewed me, in so coldly advising me to reside where I was, gave me a little concern. It was not to the caresses of men, or the favours of fortune, that my soul was sensible; it was to the hard-heartedness of George, whose fond conceit bore heavy upon all my cares, and turned me into ridicule for my tenderness and zeal: For I clearly discovered, from the conduct and discourse of Mr de Sercine, the opinion which they had given him of me. I was yet touched more to the quick at the blindness of Rose and Patrick, who delivered themselves up so rashly

rashly to their first expectations, and at the ingratitude with which they were determined to cause me the most mortal grief that I could possibly suffer. Notwithstanding, in spite of the troubles into which these bitter reflections cast me, I formed upon the spot the only two resolutions which remained for me to take under these sorrowful circumstances; the one was, to spare them even my reproaches, since they had hitherto been unprofitable, and which could serve for no other purpose but to render them more blameable; the other was, to return with all speed to Ireland, and to think no more of being useful to them otherwise than by my vows and prayers. They had of themselves found counsels, protection, succour, and establishments, if one could believe the flatteries of their self-love; they had no more to expect from me, and moreover it appeared plainly enough that they were willing to receive no more of my advice.

I shall not affirm that resentment and vexation did not enter into the composition of that internal oath I had taken of quitting France; but I am confident at least that reason and religion found nothing to condemn in it. On the contrary, they both with equal force persuaded me to that journey; and when I found my mind more free, and my blood less in motion, I gave thanks to heaven for having permitted me, who had been engaged in powerful bonds to a party, to surmount the weakness of blood, and the motions of an excessive tenderness.

I had then power to make this calm answer to Mr de Sercine; that the interests of my brothers and sister were very safely placed in his hands; and though I had a right to expect to be treated with a little more regard and confidence, I had nevertheless the consolation to see my family highly honoured in the King's protection and his. I said no more; and this civil answer, which was less expected than some strokes of moral chagrin, revived a tranquillity and joy in all the assembly; it helped to moderate and cool the former heats. I then did the honours of the house, and took a part in the conversation, with a resolution  
tion

tion to avoid every thing that might renew my grief, notwithstanding the sight of Rose, whom I looked upon as the unhappy victim of the ambition of my brother. Her innocent charms, her bashful and perplexed looks, which with pain she fixed on me, wrung some sighs from the bottom of my heart, which I could not keep in without violence. I formed a design of holding a private conversation with her, to make a new effort on her mind, or at least to fortify it by the repetition of my ancient maxims. I made a sign to her to follow me out of the apartment, and she would have obeyed, but George observed me. He penetrated my design, and holding her down when she was about to rise and follow me, he with an affected sweetness said to me, that I had had all seasons to give my sage counsels to Rose, and must not now deprive such honourable company of her presence; and that by putting her into the hands of Madam de Sercine, I might reckon that she had no further occasion for any other lesson than the example of a lady so amiable and prudent. After this manner my all was cruelly ravished from me, without leaving me the pleasure of giving her in private the last adieu. With difficulty I had the liberty of conversing a moment with Patrick. I did not enter into any new detail, but after some just reproaches on his weakness, which rendered all his good qualities unprofitable, I exhorted him to the love at least of virtue, even at the time he should forget the practice of it; and I foretold him one part of the evils with which he was threatened. It is possible I should not have been able to conceal from him the resolution of my departure, if George, who apprehended so much my seductions, though I had more reason to fear his, had not slept between to interrupt me. He told me with an air of satisfaction, that he had laboured effectually in our fortune with Rose and Patrick; that I should be always the first to whom he should make an offering of the profits; and that he recommended his enterprizes to my prayers. Go, says I, go George, and may your fortune surpass your hopes; the most ardent of my

prayers is to see you wise and happy : But I am mistaken if you become so by such strange methods. Mr de Sercine, and my lord Linch, who joined us the same moment, affected to interrupt me by misplaced compliments. It was easy to observe, that they all three acted by concert, to take from me the power of saying some things to them which they could not hear without shame. Necessity made me yield to this tyranny. I saw them go, without giving them any other token of resentment but my silence. I held my eyes constantly down, and when in taking their leave they assured me they would often send me tidings of them, I made them no answer but by an inclination of the head and profound reverences.

It is true, that Patrick protested to me, pressing my hand, that my interests should be always as dear to him as his own, and that he would speedily give me better proofs of his sentiments. But what could I build upon a character so weak and inconstant, in whom it appeared, that new impressions were always the strongest? He had acknowledged his duty two hours before; he had engaged himself to my views, by confessing his fault in suffering himself to be drawn away by the counsels of his brother; and I had seen him advance to fly me with an air of as much satisfaction as they had who would ravish him from me, without having even explained to me the bottom of his designs, and without giving me any light into his former steps, to serve at least as a rule for my own conduct. I employed the first moments I passed alone after their departure, in renewing the oath I had taken to quit France. I had now no reasons remaining to give me the least scruple in doing this. I was disengaged from all my duties by their obstinacy and flight; and after the outrageous manner in which they came to treat me, tenderness of blood would be no more than a weakness.

Nevertheless, as I would give no room for reproach, I did not think I ought to abandon Saïsons without leaving some persons of trust in it, to take care of their affairs, and who would faithfully deliver up  
what

what I was resolved to leave them. Although the right of primogeniture had given me the best part of all that we had possessed hitherto in common, my resolution was to resign to them without exception all my pretensions thereto, and to take only out of the money yet in my hands as much as would be necessary to defray the expences of my journey. Coleraine afforded me a retreat, where I could always live commodiously on the profits of my benefice alone. I then cast my eyes on Mr de Pesses, whose probity I was perfectly acquainted with, and even judging that a commission of this nature would be agreeable to him, as it would afford him fresh opportunities of doing service to Rose and my brothers, I sent for him to come immediately to Saisons.

This extraordinary invitation gave him some hopes, which appeared upon his arrival to be but ill-grounded; for acquainting him with my resolution to return to Ireland, I did not leave him ignorant of the motives of it, nor consequently conceal from him that which I had discovered from my short conversation with Patrick upon what related to Rose and my lord Linch. He was at first out of measure afflicted, even to make me fear some fatal effect from his grief, when he considered upon the whole, that my departure deprived him of the only resource he could have about her. Nevertheless, recovering from this transport, and seeing me too strongly fortified in my design to give him room to flatter himself that I could possibly change my sentiments, he rejoiced, as I had foreseen, at the choice I made to commit to him the trust of our house. He acquired by this step a right of seeing my sister again, and of holding some correspondence with her, which he could not promise himself otherwise, under circumstances so little favourable for his love. I asked him, if being lodged near Patrick in his residence at Saisons, he had never perceived any thing that had passed contrary to his interest and mine. He told me he had often imagined, during whole nights, that he had heard a noise in the garden, and in other places; but that

misstrusting nothing good manners would not give him leave to carry his curiosity very far in another person's house. I interrogated upon the same head the only domestic I had left with me, and could draw no further light from him; so that on my departure I could not carry away the satisfaction of knowing by what artifices they had deceived me, nor if I had it yet in my power to shield myself from them. This knowledge indeed would not at all repair the evil; but it would help me to reason more justly, on the unhappy consequences that must necessarily follow.

It was not without a tender regret, that I next morning took leave of Mr de Pessies, having first put into his custody about ten thousand crowns, which were the only remains of the fortune of our ancestors. I left with him a common note, addressed to my brothers, in which I declared to them without any mark of resentment, that finding myself disengaged from all my promises by a thousand reasons, which I avoided to repeat, I had taken the resolution of returning to Coleraine, and that if I had once thought I had the power of preferring them for some time to my flock, I now looked upon myself obliged to return to my ancient duties, since my presence and cares had become absolutely unprofitable to them. I exhorted them to remember their birth and their religion, and what their duty was from these two motives to God and to the honour of their ancestors. I earnestly recommended their sister to them, the care of whom was from henceforth their first duty, and of whom they must give so much the more rigorous account, as they had voluntarily charged themselves with her. In fine, I acquainted them that I had put into the care of Mr de Pessies, our house and money, to which I assigned to them all my right. I left him with a much longer letter for Rose, which contained nothing but tenderness and wholesome counsels. Nevertheless, I could not conceal that I did myself a good deal of violence in writing with such moderation. It was sufficient to let her know, that all the wounds  
of



of my heart were closed. I stifled my complaints, having resolved for the future to take no advice but from reason and my duty.

However, I had yet another combat with myself, in passing through St Germain in my way to Dieppe ; and I had a stronger proof than ever, from the pain I endured in overcoming myself, that the best regulated movements of nature are difficult to be governed. What pains then ought it of consequence to cost us to obtain a complete empire over the passions ? I knew that my brothers and sister intended to be at court before the end of the week. I found I had an inclination to wait for them, and to seek, for the last time, the opportunity of seeing them. Sometimes I had it in my thoughts to load them with all the reproaches they had deserved, and which the presence of Mr de Sercine had obliged me to stifle in my heart. Sometimes it was to gratify my tenderness, which was yet powerful enough to make me forget their ingratitude. They were in no expectation of my departure ; they had never looked upon my proposal of quitting them, which my discontent had often made me threaten, as a serious menace. It might yet possibly happen, that when they saw me on the road ready to be gone without hopes of a return, that the memory of all that I had done for them, and the shame of having caused me such unjust vexations, might oblige them to resume the sentiments which they once had for me. But if they should do so, to what end could such an alteration aim ? They were already too far engaged ; they had taken to themselves guides, whom decency would not permit them to abandon, and whose views could never be made to accord with mine. Moreover, it was flattering myself too much to believe that they were disposed to a reconciliation with me. I was become inconvenient and troublesome to them : I ought to fear appearing again at St Germain. Who knows in what manner they would receive my visit, and whether George, who had been capable of making a game of my natural infirmities to Mr de

Sercine and Mr Dillon, might not yet crown his revenge by some notable insult? out of all these reflections I applied my mind to those which ought to make me hasten my journey. I arrived at Dieppe, where I took the advantage of the first vessel that was bound for London. The moment I embarked, a letter was sent me from Mr de Pesses, which he had addressed to me by chance at the same inn in which we passed some days on our arrival in France. I doubted whether I ought to read it, under a fear of discovering some new subject of pain; but a tenderness for my blood prevailed again. I opened it, and found that it contained fresh instances to stop me short in my journey, together with the relation of a visit, which Mr de Pesses had paid to my brothers and sister. Having fortunately discovered the place of their abode at Paris, he did not lose one moment in acquainting them with my departure. Rose fell into a swoon at the news, and did not come to herself without shedding a torrent of tears. Patrick also gave all the tokens of a lively grief. Even George himself appeared to be struck at a discovery so unexpected; yet he applied out of hand all his wit to console his sister and brother, in representing to them, that my presence was no way necessary to their projects; that nothing could hinder them from hoping that I might live happily enough on my benefice; and that if their affairs took such a turn as they had reason to promise themselves, it would never be too late to invite me to come back to share in their fortune. Mr de Pesses concluded with the tears of Rose, and the regrets of Patrick, whom I yet loved tenderly, and that if I would try any new effort, they might still be brought back to my views. I saw from the whole scope of the letter, a lover restless and unquiet on his own account, who laboured to detain me by false hopes, and to make my return prove to re-establish a little his own. But at the same time that I perceived the sincere affliction of Patrick and Rose, I observed the haughty and inflexible temper of George. I was convinced, that he did not

not give into more tenderness for them in the plot he had managed to take them from me, than resentment at the manner I myself had taken in carrying away my sister from him. He was minded to revenge himself with interest. So I could not yet attempt to take them away from him, without drawing on me a new revenge, which would childishly and to no end perpetuate reprisals. This thought, which was one of the principal motives of my departure, defended me against the solicitations of Mr de Pesses, notwithstanding the excessive compassion his letter had raised in me. I wrote him on the spot a short answer, to let him know the constancy of my resolutions, and my embarking, which I did the same hour. In two days of a prosperous voyage I arrived at London, from whence I travelled by land to Holy-head. An English vessel, which I found by chance ready to weigh anchor, landed me in four days at Londonderry, and the day following in the evening I got once more to my house at Coleraine.

Four months absence would have made me find a lively satisfaction in the embraces and caresses of my friends, if I could have got rid of a thousand anxious remembrances, of which I had the source rather more in my heart than my imagination. I could not see myself again so near the grave of my father, without feeling a mortal confusion in being able to give him no better an account of the trust he had committed to my care. The testimonies of my fidelity and zeal, which I had at the bottom of my heart, fully dispersed all shadow of remorse; but far from vanishing my regret and sorrow, it served only to call up into my memory the unserviceableness of my endeavours, and the miserable fruits I had gathered from my hopes. These heavy weights were always hung to my heart, and I carried them about me in every place. When I examined matters in a more favourable sense, I found I had not done that justice to George which he merited on many occasions. The prudence of his man-

ners, the soundness of his judgment, and the honour of his principles, were three points in which I had not yet observed any foible; and I could well conceive, that notwithstanding every part the spirit of revenge had infused into his conduct, yet he had always maintained his respect for me, and that ambition, or the love of the world, with which he would inspire his brother and sister, had no reason to alarm me that he would have led them to vice by his approbation or example. But that species of virtue, which he was capable of implanting in them, appeared to me almost as formidable as vice itself. It was only an appetite of pleasing men, it was a value for their favours, and a relish of all the paths that might conduct him to them.—Would the most worthy man, who proposes to himself no other end, wait a long time in becoming vicious, if vice may be made to answer his views? And would not he in reality take that step, which he thought so necessary for him? For what end does it answer, to disguise it under other names? Is a nobleness of sentiments any other thing than pride, when it has nothing for its object but grandeur and human distinctions? Politeness and complaisance, which serve to open the road to fortune, are they any thing else than a loose and cowardly approbation of the vices and irregularities of others? Gallantry, without which one can bear no rank in the world, can it be distinguished seriously from sensual pleasure, of which it is, as it were, the flower and refinement? I agreed that a man of judgment and honour, such as I figured to myself George to be, might not deliver himself to the management of this depravation: But what curb could hold in Rose and Patrick? Their age, which was scarce above infancy, their tender and flexible nature, which might render them capable of excess, either in good or evil, according to the first impressions given them, the lustre of their natural qualities, which might expose them to the most urgent and inevitable temptations; in fine, the temerity of their brother, who could  
not

not in the least conceive that they had need of precaution, were all just subjects of alarm, which made me fear that they would fall into disgrace at every step.

In reflecting also upon the cause of my regrets; a scruple arose in my mind, which caused me much perplexity. The opinion I had of the judgment and probity of George, made me doubt if the delicacy of my religion had not been carried too far, and if the idea I had formed to myself of the world had not been false or at least exaggerate. It was certain I was not indebted for it to my own experience; it was the fruit of my study, or of the principles of education, which I sucked in at the seminary at Carrickfergus. On the other hand, George, although only a few years older than his brother, had had a happy opportunity of opening his mind much more by his conversation and acquaintance in the world; because being considered as the eldest of our house, he had been obliged for divers years of my father's life to represent him in all assemblies and meetings of the province, and to preserve certain ties of decorum with the noblesse of our country. Was it impossible that he should have acquired more just notions than mine, and that being better instructed in the usages and customs of the world, he might judge with more discernment what was criminal and what was innocent? Under this supposition, he might not only know better than I, what was suitable to the interests of his brother and sister, but might have reason to reproach me, which he often had done; that my zeal surpassed my understanding, and that I was fitter for the solitude of a closet, than to give rules of conduct for the world: That I deserved to be considered as a blind and inconsiderate censor, and a turbulent man, who perplexed out of season his prudent designs by my complaints and importunate remonstrances. In truth, the holy books, of which all the maxims are infallible, declare war against the world, and the lovers of it, in a thousand places; but they explain

also what is understood by the lovers of the world : These are the cheats, the knaves, the proud, the sensual, the revengeful, the robbers of other mens goods, &c. All qualities which we cannot with reason attribute to a great part of those who have acquaintance with it, and which we cannot ascribe in the least without a criminal temerity to those who do not know it at all. It is then upon this species of men only, if there be many of such a frightful character, on whom all the evangelical maledictions fall ; which does not hinder but that a great many of those who live in the world, may maintain a safe and amiable intercourse with them ; and George might have been acquainted with this by experience.

Under the uncertainty I continued after these reflections, I bitterly repented, that I had not drawn greater advantages from the time I had spent in France for acquiring that knowledge in which I found myself deficient. It would have been easy for me to have been introduced into all sorts of companies, and to have discerned their principles and customs. I had learned by myself what a christian ought to think of the world. Perhaps I should have better agreed with George after having acquired this knowledge, and peace had continued to reign in our family : Instead of which, by my condemning with precipitation whatever displeased me, I might be guilty of troubling it. This doubt gave me such a sharp affliction, that I should have had a difficulty in being comforted, if heaven had not given repose to my conscience by another reflection. If it be true, says I to myself, that George has not in the least gone astray in his notions and prospects, I ought not to regret that he hath taken from me the conduct of his brother and sister ; they could not be better than under him. If he has gone astray, as much as I imagine, I had reason to forsake him ; and in condemning him have done my duty, though I have lost all hopes of reclaiming him to his.

It was not at Coleraine, that my difficulties could be well cleared up. A little market-town, almost intirely made up of tradesmen and labourers, was a place very improper to represent to me the world, in which my brothers and sister were engaged. Moreover, innocence and tranquillity had for a long time swayed in my flock. In the mean time, as the dispositions of providence had began to manifest themselves upon my fate, and that all the rest of my life was destined to much perturbation, it was not granted to me even at Coleraine, during some months I passed there, to enjoy that repose which I came in quest of, and which every-body there possessed. Scarce had I began to recover a little from that deep grief which I had brought from France, when, to prepare me for a thousand new afflictions, to which fraternal tenderness must quickly expose me, heaven raised me up one trial so much the more grievous, as it bore upon the honour of my father; that is to say, what I held the most precious next to my regards to God and religion. It is not to interrupt the history of my brothers and sister, that I stop a moment to give this relation, but because it is knit together in the consequences with the greater part of the events of which I have undertaken the recital.

Some gentlemen of the county of Antrim, ill affected to the government, and exasperated above all things to see the best lands in Ireland passed into the hands of the king's favourites, without any other title for obtaining them, than their cringings and flatteries, secretly confederated together with a design to raise a rebellion, and perhaps with the hopes of intirely shaking off the English yoke. The success of so great an enterprize, depending on an infinite number of springs and movements, they had employed many years in dressing up their plot; and the secret had been kept so faithfully, that even after the discovery of it, there was no coming at the knowledge of the accomplices. One of the confederates, whose name was Fincer, an ancient friend and neighbour of our house, had unfortunately lost the general  
plan

plan of the project, which was found by one of the king's officers. Fincer forthwith perceived his loss; but being satisfied that it was wrote by a faithful and unknown hand, and the foresight of the conspirators, who had dressed up the contrivances, having disguised the names of persons and places after a manner that they could not be discovered, he flattered himself that he should be able to dispel all suspicions, should they fall on him, and render all inquiries fruitless. Nevertheless, at the same time he did not neglect to give information of his misfortune to all those whom the same interests had obliged to take a share in it; but to prevent their being alarmed at the danger, he swore them a-new to a fidelity under all trials. In effect the viceroy, to whom the scheme was immediately transmitted, unsuccessfully took all sorts of ways to discover the authors and instruments of the conspiracy.

In the mean time, the fear of so pressing a danger having obliged the government to proclaim a reward for the discovery of the secret, according to the practice of England, they came in the end, from divers probable notices, such as the time and place where the scheme had been found, to be assured that it was Mr Fincer that had lost it. He was arrested, and conducted to prison in Dublin. They proceeded to his examination out of hand, and the viceroy was present at it: But instead of seeing a criminal dismayed and confounded, was it not surprising that he did not discover the least emotion? Fincer offered voluntarily to unfold the whole. He confessed he had two things to reproach himself with; the one, for having kept so long a time such a dangerous plan; and the other, his delay after he had lost it, in coming and declaring the bottom of the mystery to the viceroy, to save him the false steps in which an imaginary danger had engaged him: That for the first of these two faults he had no other justification to make than his curiosity, which had made him keep by him for such a long time, a piece uncommon, and of an extraordinary nature: And as to the second, it was true,



true, that his duty obliged him, as soon as possible, to give what insight he could to the viceroy; but it may be easily imagined, that an innocent man, who loves repose, would avoid, as much as he could, exposing himself to unprofitable embarrassments; in a word, that he had hopes that the plan would never have been discovered to have been in his hands; and that being certain that the project of a revolt contained in it, was nothing but an idle chimera, which had vanished with the life and memory of its author, he had thought that in regard to the public tranquillity, as well as his own, he could not take a wiser course than to keep silence.

As this confession appeared very obscure, and as he was demanded to give an explanation of it less ambiguous, he added, with the same tranquillity, that he was grieved to be forced to defame the honour of the dead; but that under the necessity he was to conceal nothing, he declared without regret, that the late earl of ——— had been the author of the plan; that the zeal of this lord for the Romish religion had all his life cherished in him an ardent desire to draw her out of oppression; that he had formed a hundred projects, which he had not so much as communicated to his friends; and that they had never proceeded further than upon paper; that his death having helped to destroy them, it was likely there remained some few copies; that the plan now in question was one of them; that having found it among the papers of his father, who died also some months after, he was ignorant in what manner it came there; that he remembered only to have heard his father speak of the designs of the earl, who was one of his best friends, and of the efforts which he had always used to cure him of these vain imaginations: in fine, to give a yet greater appearance of probability to his discourse, Fincer assured the viceroy, that my brothers would not have resolved to quit Ireland, but for fear of being accused sooner or latter, and it may be with justice, for having participated in the projects of their father.

In truth, this series of calumnies was not supported by the least proof; but as the viceroy had nothing more to produce against the person accused, he was obliged to suspend the proceedings, in order to wait for new discoveries, and Fincer was remanded to prison. The noise of this adventure having the same day been spread about Dublin, I received by one post many letters to apprise me of the injury done my father, and to warn me of the danger I was exposed to, of being taken up. This in truth was what I ought naturally to expect: But less moved by this fear, than touched for the honour of my blood, I did not at all consider whether I had any risks to run, and I believed I ought to hasten to Dublin, for many reasons. I used so much diligence, that having outstripped the order of the viceroy, I presented myself before him when he little expected it. The strength with which I defended the innocence of my father, and the tender I voluntarily made of my head, if it appeared by the least testimony that he had failed in his duty to the government, or his obedience to the laws of his country, balanced at least the depositions of Fincer. I requested then with the same resolution to be confronted face to face by our accuser. They did not refuse me this request, which would have been required of me, if I had not demanded it as a favour. The viceroy was a witness of this scene. Fincer was of my age, and we had known one another from our infancy. My presence disconcerted him. He told me with a perplexed air, that he was surprised to see me engaged in an affair, when I was accused of nothing, at least by his depositions; that as to what related to my father, it was with a mortal regret that he had been constrained to reveal all that he knew of him. I prayed to be informed of that which he pretended to know with so much certainty. He delivered it in the terms before related, and which were the same as those he had given in his first depositions; which made me judge that the personage he had acted was counterfeited. I conceived that it would be difficult for me to confound this impostor; and  
though

though an accusation uncertain and without proof was not sufficient absolutely to blemish the memory of my father, yet I afflicted myself so much the more, to see him become a prey to suspicions; that Fincer being a protestant, I foresaw, that, all things considered, the court and the public would be more favourable to him than to my family. This fear was verified upon the spot, by the conduct of the viceroy. He took my vexation for a mark of perplexity, and seeing that Fincer did not give me the least advantage over him by his answers, he declared, that without considering me as a person guilty, I should be detained provisionally under the guard of a messenger of State.

In the mean time, far from looking upon my imprisonment as a new disgrace, I thought it would tend to clear up the honour of my father, by giving me a right to press his accuser more briskly, and to obtain from the judges an explication, which would remove all the doubts of the public; for that I thought was the greatest mischief I had to dread. I signified to my friends, to get together, in the neighbourhood of the estate which was once ours, all the witnesses that might prove the quiet disposition of my father, and the horror he had all his life for factions and disturbance. This inquiry took up a considerable time. On his part the viceroy, who would precipitate nothing, had his informations and processes spun out in length, in hopes that sooner or later some ray of light might spring up to dispel the darkness; insomuch that three months passed over without any change happening in Fincer's or my fortune. In fine, the zeal of my friends procured me such favourable memorials, that I thought my father justified, and my troubles at an end, when by the negligence or corruption of the keepers, Fincer found the means to make his escape from prison, and of getting fortunately out of Ireland. His escape was managed so secretly, that there was no discovering any the least track of his flight; and it was by other adventures

adventures, that I a long time after came to know from himself, that he had retired into Denmark.

It might be imagined, that the viceroy would look upon this voluntary flight from justice as a conviction; and I was persuaded that a circumstance so strong, joined to the testimonies I had gathered in my father's favour, would not leave the least pretence in the judges to refuse giving a public declaration of his innocence. Notwithstanding, the answer I obtained to my solicitations was, that the obscurity and uncertainty of the fact being not diminished by the flight of the informer, they could not give such a declaration without rashness and injustice; that the love of liberty might have prevailed on Fincer to fly, as much as the fear of punishment; that the laws of the land required formal proofs, and that I must wait time. They gave no disturbance to his only daughter, whom they left in the peaceable enjoyment of his estate. As to me, they were contented to take bail of me, according to custom, and in the end restored me to my liberty. The public made various judgments of this conduct. Some imagined that the viceroy, being discouraged by the unsuccessfulness of his inquiries, and losing hopes after the escape of Fincer, had chose to relinquish all new pursuits; and that if he refused to justify the memory of my father, it was with an intention to humble the catholics, by letting the suspicions they were under remain in the minds of those who thought the conspiracy real. Others judged, with a greater resemblance of reason, that this appearance of moderation was no more than a pretence, and that they designed thereby to lull the conspirators asleep under a shew of tranquillity, to have an eye under hand to their actions, and surprise them in some false step.

These conjectures busied me much less than the regret I had of having drawn so little advantage from my journey. I took my way in a melancholy state to Coleraine, to find in the exercise of my employment the only comfort that remained for me after so many disappointments. My submission to the orders

orders of providence prevented me from impeaching it of any rigour ; but I lamented that it gave me a heart too sensible, or that I did not receive from it consolations proportioned to my weakness. All the pleasure I found in the practice of my duty gave me no relish for the exercise of my reason ; and the troubles I had suffered for more than a year had made a change even in my blood and constitution. I lost my rest and appetite, yet my recompence bore a different proportion to my anxiety, and had not the same power to make itself felt. In the mean time, christian hope fortified my soul in proportion as my strength decayed. I was then more than fifty years old. It is worth while, says I, for the remainder of a life so short, to long for happiness and repose ? But the ties of blood ought to be dissolved by death : Let us suppose that they are so already. For what end does it answer to put a difference between things which have the separation of one only instant of time between them ? And have not I the very same supposition to make ? My father is in his grave, and my brothers have obliged me to abandon them ; what hinders but I should look upon myself as a man already dead, since being disengaged from the duties of nature, it is only too true that I have nothing more remaining worth my notice upon earth.

It was possible, that with the help of these reflections I might have acquired, sooner or later, an insensibility necessary for my repose. I made so many efforts to obtain it, that I had delayed, even to this moment, to send any intelligence of myself to my brothers ; and that was a violence I had done myself only with this view. It is true, I had received no letters from them, and not mistrusting any obstacle that might prevent their writing, I took their silence for a confirmation of their flights : But my resentment had not carried me to defend myself against such inquiry so long, if I had not thought that I was justified by a more lawful reason. I longed then to bring myself to such a pass, if not to forget, at least to support their ingratitude

itude without grief, and to pray to heaven for their happiness without impairing my own.

One Sunday evening, as I went unto my house full of these Ideas, my footman, whom I had taken in my journey through St Germain, and who being originally from Ireland, was glad to follow me to Coleraine, where he continued in my service, told me, that I was impatiently waited for since the fall of night, by a young man whom he did not know, and who did not think proper to discover his name. He added, that being shewed into a chamber, he earnestly recommended to him not to let any person come near him till my return; and if I did not come alone, to whisper me, that he longed to speak to me in private. I hastened to him, reflecting within myself what could be the meaning of such a mysterious visit; but was far from imagining the truth. I opened the door of the chamber, and at the same instant found myself in the arms of Patrick.

One may easily fancy, that notwithstanding all my resolutions, my first movements were a transport of tenderness and joy. Nevertheless, being seized all at once with a lively inquietude, proceeding as much from the silence with which this dear brother had embraced me, as from his unexpected arrival, and the account given me by my footman, I disengaged myself from his arms, and looked on him with a steady eye, without having even the power to open my mouth. His eyes were moistened with tears, and his countenance extremely pale and dejected. My troubles could not but increase. I took him by the hand, and in leading him towards an elbow chair, good God! says I, what do these tears and this silence proclaim? And your arrival itself, of which I did not receive the least notice, this paleness, this trouble?—Patrick, added I, I tremble at what I am going to hear; yet I intreat you not to delay in giving me this satisfaction. He answered with a low voice, that he had matters extremely grievous to tell me; that finding me resolved not to give him the least answer to his letters, he had chose to come himself to Ireland, to awaken my

my tenderness in favour of the unfortunate George, the sorrowful Rose, and himself; that resentment ought to have bounds put to it, in a heart so good and so religious as mine; that in acknowledging themselves guilty in their letters of a failure of that confidence and submission which they owed me, they had hoped that I would not have hardened my heart so far as to have refused them all manner of answers, and denied them every relief; that what I refused to do for them was a debt due to the honour of our name, and the memory of our father: In fine, if his presence should not have more weight than his letters to interest me in the misfortunes of George, the unhappy situation of Rose, and his own troubles, he had nothing left him but despair, and the power, as soon as might be, of returning back to France, there to be a perpetual witness of the miseries of his brother and sister, and himself to drag out there a life full of anguish and affliction. In the consternation I was cast by a discourse so obscure and fatal, he had time to add, before I was in a condition to interrupt him, that he learned from the daughter of Fincer, the perils to which he found himself exposed in Ireland, and that I might well judge it was for that reason he arrived by night at Coleraine; but that life was not so dear as to suffer him to be alarmed at what threatened him, and that without being frightened at his own proper danger, it was on my resolutions his must intirely depend.

I had need to disburthen myself of many sighs, to find power to make him this answer; that what I had been informed of him was altogether new to me; that since my departure from France I had not received one single letter from him, nor the least light into his situation, or into that of his brother and sister; that I comprehended nothing of what he called their misfortunes and troubles, no more than he did what related to the daughter of Fincer: In fine, I conjured him to explain himself without delay; and to begin to remove the dissidence which he appeared to have of my sentiments, I embraced him again with  
the

the most lively tenderness, and assured him that I had not only not ceased to love my dear brothers and sister, but that I was also as much disposed as ever to undertake every thing for their service.

This testimony of my affection helped to revive a little his hopes. He made me the following recital, which time has not yet effaced from my memory; but nevertheless I desired him to commit it to writing in his more calm moments; so that I shall do no more than transcribe here his very words.

I bitterly call to mind the time, says he, with a deep sigh, when I ceased to follow your counsels, because it is from that period I ought to date all the misfortunes of my sister and my own; you are to expect that I must carry back my relation higher than the time of our residence at Saïsons, for I cannot make you understand all the reasons for which your aid is necessary to us, without confessing that I had begun to disguise from you some share of my conduct before our departure from Paris. It is true, I had not then any accomplice, and that all as yet passed within my own heart. You remember my silence and the appearances of melancholy, for which you have often reproached me, tho' you were far from penetrating into the cause. It may be you accused for it my natural inquietude, and the disgust of all things that I possessed, of which I had made you my confidant at Coleraine. But on the other hand, call up to your imagination, that my humour was intirely changed all at one stroke, and that all the movements of my heart were of a sudden fixed. I had conceived a fatal passion, which united all happiness in the object of it. Alas! what shall I say to you? I had seen the most charming creature in the world, in a street neighbouring to our's, and I found myself more inflamed than ever any person was before.

The sweetness I discovered in those new sentiments, made me renounce all other business that had no aim to that. I searched for some entire days an opportunity to get another sight of the dear object of my love. I was incessantly in the same street, and  
about



about the same house where I first saw her. I thought I passed the day happily when she appeared at her window. You have not forgot the absent airs which I brought home in the evening to our lodging, and how I appeared wholly taken up with my reveries. My passion gained strength daily. I could never have prevailed on myself to follow you to the country, if our house had been so far removed from Paris as to deprive me of the hopes of returning to it many times every week. I did the same violence to my thoughts when you made me the proposal of carrying off Rose from my brother; and if the attachment I had for you had not powerfully combated in your favour, I might possibly have added to your vexation that of seeing me fly from you in my turn. Nevertheless, I served you faithfully, and I afterwards applauded myself in having that deference for you, when I found it was easy for me, as I had foreseen, to return almost every day to the city. To deprive you at first of all suspicions of my steps, I used to slip out at a time when I thought you were most employed in your studies, for I many times pretended to go and take a walk in the neighbouring fields. I was not sometimes more than an instant at Paris, before fortune favoured me enough not to make me wait long for the happiness I went in search of. This was yet the sole pleasure of seeing what I already loved with the most perfect ardour. I could not even think that cares and diligence so little manifested in actions could be taken notice of. Having however had the curiosity to inform myself in the neighbourhood of the name and condition of my mistress, I came to understand that she was the daughter of Mr de L——, who had a long time been employed in divers negotiations in the courts of Germany, and that she was born abroad in some of her father's embassies.

During this time George, whom you had recommended to me to see often, and to exhort him to live in a good understanding with us, renewed all his efforts to make me relish an abode at Paris, preferably

to one at Saisons, and to use my endeavours to inspire Rose with the same sentiments. I listened a little to his discourses; he made me proposals, the advantages of which I did not even examine, being satisfied that he entered into them as much out of resentment to you, as from a zeal to my interests. Afterwards you gave it me in charge to make a journey to St Germain, and in truth I made many there; but I must confess it to you, that instead of employing two days on each journey, as my absence made you believe, I returned in the evening of the same day to Paris, where my passion, which had left me no repose, made me find an extreme pleasure in walking one part of the night under the windows of madam de L——. I formed in these solitary walks twenty projects, which vanished the next day, without one of them being carried into execution. They all tended to make a declaration to her of my tenderness; but if I had spirits enough in the evening to form the most sweet hopes for the whole night, a hundred difficulties presented themselves to the mind of a stranger, to oblige me to abandon them all in the morning. I often had thoughts of opening my mind to George. He already had made many acquaintances at Paris, and might put me in the way the easier to satisfy my impatience. But I would not give him this advantage over me, and by a strange capriciousness I became jealous even of my own secret.

I would not have given you this detail, but to conduct you to one of the most extraordinary adventures in the world; an adventure that decided my fate, and which put George in the possession of the empire which he has since exercised over me. I went one day to St Germain, from whence love led me back in a good hour to Paris. I did not fail, before it was dark, to procure myself the only satisfaction, to which I had referred all my cares, and I enjoyed it this day more happily than I had ever done before; because madam de L—— made her appearance for a long time at her window. I never  
before

before had so well discerned all her charms, and I concluded to lose myself in this dangerous view. She had one of those faces, in which affability and sweetness made the mean parts, and though the lustre of her complexion, and the delicacy of her eyes, darted out fire and sprightliness, yet her port and fine shape joined in adding fuel to my desires. All her form and all her motions appeared to be suited to my heart. She was about the age of my sister; but with all the graces of the most tender youth she had an air of maturity, which made me form an advantageous judgment of her wit and reason. I do not know, whether this picture be sufficient to justify all that I have felt for her; but imagine that the description I have given you of her graces and perfections does not come up to what I afterwards discovered, when I had the good fortune to see her near, and to converse with her.

It was impossible but that, casting out her eyes on the different objects in the street, she must have perceived that mine were tenderly fixed on her. I planted myself at the door of a coffee-house room which was near enough to her house. I remained there a long time after she had retired; and although I had no further hope to see her again, since the day was ended, yet I could scarce spare time to sup before I returned to the same place where I had spent such agreeable moments. It was now about eleven o'clock; my imagination did me that service which I could no longer receive from my eyes. Nevertheless I thought in the end to retire, when I perceived by the light of lanthorns many persons who came up one after the other to the gate of Mr de L——, and walked into the house without noise. Curiosity made me approach nearer; I observed that the door stood half open, and that some new comer went in every moment, who pushed it softly without shutting it altogether. I had already reckoned nineteen or twenty persons who had gone in; they were dressed all in black; but the court of France was at that time in mourning, and I myself was cloathed in the  
same

same colour. Moreover, their air, and the neatness of their dress, did not leave me room to suspect their character and intentions. In fine, taking notice that this procession was not yet ended, it came into my mind to follow the first that should next go in, and to introduce myself with him into the house. If it was with the knowledge and approbation of the master that such a multitude of people entered his house, I was in hopes to remain undiscovered in the crowd, and not only to satisfy my curiosity, but it may be to get an opportunity of seeing madam de L——, and the happiness to speak to her a moment. If so many unknown people went in upon an evil design, I ought to thank heaven for giving me an opportunity of being useful to a person so dear, and to defend her from a danger which, it may be, threatened her fortune or life.

I did not boggle a moment after this reflection, but entered the court with the first person whom I saw arrive, leaving him to go before me only five or six steps. There was only one flambeau to give light. My guide crossed the court, and I followed him rather by the help of my ears than my eyes. He passed through a porch, and from thence into a narrow entry, at the end of which was a pair of stairs. Two lanthorns, that hung at the foot of the steps, (for the stairs let one down into a cellar) cast light enough for discerning every object about us. The unknown turned his face before he went down, and not knowing mine, he only saluted me civilly. I continued to follow him, although the situation of the place began to inspire me with some suspicion. I arrived at the bottom of the stairs, where I was surprised to find the place all at once as lightsome as in full day. It was indeed a cellar divided into three subterraneous walks, the walls of which were filled with a vast number of wax lights. But still following my guide I passed through the middle walk, which led to a vast arched hall, where I found myself in the midst of more than fifty persons. The greatest part of them were seated, and talking to one another  
in

in a low voice with great decency and modesty. They saluted me, on making my appearance. Though my confusion was great, I was too far engaged not to wish to be a witness of the end of this scene; and the air of good breeding and honour, which prevailed in the company, protected me against all sorts of fears; I did not scruple to take a place on the nearest chair to me. They looked on me from every side, and I perceived that my presence raised some astonishment. But I affected to preserve an easy and natural countenance, resolved to wait at least until they took notice what they thought of my assurance.

I was soon delivered from this uneasiness by the arrival of many ladies whom a servant went to summon. They all got up to receive them, which occasioned a disorder favourable for my views in the assembly. Every one beginning to mix and to cross one another in the throng, I did not at all doubt but I should in a little time obtain my desires; and I waited with a strong impatience to get a sight of the ladies, among whom I hoped to see madam de L—— appear. She indeed entered the first. I have given you a faint description of all her charms, and of the agitation of my heart. I was but about ten paces from her. If I had given way to my transport, I should have cast myself at her feet. She sat down with the ladies who accompanied her. All the men remained standing. They kept silence for more than a quarter of an hour, which time I employed in contemplating on my love. It is not that I did not also make some reflections on a sight so strange as that which I had before mine eyes; for I had as yet observed nothing that could make me judge what was the drift of all this ceremony: But whether it would end in what was agreeable or tragical, this I was sure of, that from the satisfaction I enjoyed, it could contain nothing but sweetness for me.

Nevertheless, what followed would have terrified me a little, had I been more subject to fear. Four men brought in a great chest, which they laid down in the middle of the room. They opened it, in order

to draw out a shapeless bundle, which I immediately knew to be a corps cloathed with the last ornaments of the dead. A deep silence was kept through the whole assembly. At the same moment I saw a coffin of a black colour, into which the corps was put, and without any ceremony deposited in the grave that was opened in one corner of the same room, and which I had not before perceived. It was filled with earth in an instant, and with so much neatness and care, that it would be difficult to find the place again. An action of this nature might have filled me with horrible ideas; but not being able to think ill of an assembly which appeared to me to be composed of worthy people, and in which many women of fashion had voluntarily assisted, I apprehended a part of the truth, and the rest was soon after cleared up to me. All the assistants ranged themselves in order, to make room in the midst of them for a person whom I had already distinguished by some marks of authority. They prepared themselves to listen to him, and he consequently, to make a discourse upon the subject that brought them together, when a word or two whispered to him by somebody in his ear, made him entirely change his order. This was no more than to communicate the same secret in a low voice, with great precaution to hinder me from understanding what he said; and the company being divided in knots to entertain themselves apart, I remained alone in the middle of the room, exposed to all their eyes. madam de L—— perceived me, and recovered me from my confusion. I was better in her memory than I could have imagined. She was touched at my embarrassment by a motive more favourable than I durst have conceived; and opening her mouth with an authority which the absence of her father gave her in his house, she declared, that if disorder arose from my presence, they might compose themselves upon her word, because her father knew me, and that she would be my surety. This goodness, of which love much more than fear made me sensible of the full value, pierced my heart with tenderness and gratitude.

itude. I advanced toward her immediately with a free air. A wink of her eye made me perfectly comprehend the manner in which I ought to conduct myself; and playing my part well enough, I revived the tranquillity and confidence of the assembly. The discourse was pronounced, and was a Christian exhortation to draw that benefit from the death of another as to engage us to live well.

As I was not far from madam L——, she found means to whisper me, that she wanted to discourse with me before my departure, and desired me to wait in some of the chambers till all the company had retired. I had no need to have an order so favourable repeated. At length I began to retire, taking the same way back by which I entered, and I desired the first servant I saw to shew me into a place that was not exposed to the eyes of the company. He made no scruple of opening a room, when I assured him it was to wait the commands of his mistress. I then for a quarter of an hour experienced all the anxiety of love. Without daring to conjecture from what motive it was that she desired to discourse with me, I threw myself into all the situations that hope or fear could suggest to me, and I sought for expressions that might be capable of corresponding with my sentiments. But the disorder I felt in seeing her, rendered all my study unprofitable. She entered into the place where I was, attended by an old woman, whom I took to be her governess. Very well! says she, as she came in, you ought to grant that you have some obligation to me: But I would fain be informed what brought you here, and how you contrived to get in without being known to any of the company. I related to her faithfully what chance had made me observe at her gate; and that doubting she might be under some circumstances of fear, the desire of doing her service at the hazard even of my life, if it were necessary, had made me take the course I did of following so many persons whom I saw go into her house. I am obliged to you, replied she, but this is not sufficient. Are you a Catholic? I answered in the affirmative.

firmative. Then, said she, interrupting me, it is necessary you should be a man of honour not to make an ill use of what you have seen, and that you give me your word upon that point. You know what we are. I protested to her, that I had not the least conception of what I had seen, and that I should mortally regret my indiscretion, if the honour it gave me of conversing with her had not put it out of my power to repent of it; that however having not seen any thing but what appeared to me to be prudent and commendable, I should be under no great difficulty to keep silence, and more especially as her will was a law which obliged me to a vow of honouring her all my life. No, says she, I cannot but think you must have formed strange ideas from what you have seen, if I did not inform you that we are protestants of the confession of Luther, and that the public exercise of our religion being denied us here, we inter our dead privately. This is all the mystery. My father, who is very zealous for his faith, has on purpose dug this vault in which we assemble. She added, that it was very fortunate for me that he was absent, because being of a choleric temper, he might have taken great offence at my boldness; but that this reason ought still to make me pay the more regard to her request not to disclose the secret, because she would be the first person exposed to his resentment; and, if I would allow her for her own interest to give me a little advice, I could not do better than on his return to seek for a speedy opportunity of making an acquaintance with him, to prevent any mischievous interpretations that he might make on what she had done in my favour.

If in my answers I had dropt any amorous expressions, which madam de L—— had pretended not to understand, I acknowledge that the weak opinion I always had of myself did not suffer me all at once to enter more fully into the meaning of her advice. But as I knew her opinion fully upon the subject of our conversation——I promised out of hand to obey her pleasure. Nevertheless, I was cast  
into



into despair, because the presence of the governante prevented me from declaring to her my tender sentiments, and more especially when she informed me, that it was full time for her to think of retiring. When shall I find again, says I, so fortunate an opportunity? I shall die of grief should I be disappointed of it. This reflection made me pass so headlong over all my fears, that I followed the first thought with which love inspired me. It is just, madam, replied I with an easy air, after the good offices you have done me, that I should inform you who I am, and what in duty I am obliged to; but I have some reasons, added I, approaching her, which will not suffer me to discover myself in this place to any body but you. I then continued to address her in a tone that the other could not hear me, that I should be the most fortunate man in the world, if I could have the opportunity of letting her know, and the satisfaction of finding she approved of what had passed in my heart for these two months past; but that I should go away the most miserable man, if she did not suffer me to carry off these hopes. Her blushes, and her fears that I should be overheard, made me immediately draw back; but I added in retiring, behold madam, who I am; you see whether it be a matter of importance to me to take such cautious measures in discovering myself; it is to your goodness that I trust so precious a secret. She recovered readily from her confusion; and giving me fresh notice that it was time to part, she said to me with great sweetness, that my secret should be in no danger from her, but that having advised me to make an acquaintance with her father, it might perhaps have been better that I had reserved it for him. Judge with what sentiments of joy I received this answer. If I wanted to have moderated them a moment, it was only to give myself up to transport as soon as I had got abroad. In reality, what an excess of good fortune was this! A stranger, without alliance, and without protection, to find himself favoured all at once in his most dear wishes; to love the most charming creature in Paris,

to see the full measure of his fortune heaped up by the hopes of pleasing her, and not to see any thing but subjects of admiration and love ! For I have not described to you the half of her charms ; I have told you only what amazed me at my separation from her ; but imagine to yourself——

I interrupted Patrick in the midst of this overflowing of his heart. I conceived, said I, that the acquainting me with your love might have been necessary to throw a light upon your affairs ; but you ought to spare these passionate details, which apprise me of nothing but what I may suppose, and which my profession does not permit me to hear without some confusion. Depend upon it that I have no need of any other motives than my affection to interest myself in your pleasures and anxieties. This discourse threw him all in a heap. He embraced, and conjured me not to take away from him the only consolation he had left. I open to you my heart, says he ; you ought to hear me out. If you would know my misfortunes, Why will you refuse to be acquainted with the source of them ? Alas ! nothing now remains of all the felicity, of all the favours which I have vaunted to you ; at least listen to all the reasons which I have to regret them.

He proceeded thus in his relation. Fancy then to yourself a thousand charms, of which I have not finished the description, but whereof you may make a much better judgment, from the impression they made on my heart. I had too much joy to contain it all within myself. The day following I thought that a lover could not forego the assistance of a friend, be it either to applaud his happiness, or to assist him every moment with his advice. I already experienced the necessity of this opinion, from the perplexity wherein I stood in the new conduct that I ought to observe in my love. Must I see madam de L—— at her house, or defer it till the return of her father ? To write to her in this interval, or to continue to present myself before her window with the same respect and the same silence ? There was

no need of art or study to know how to love ; but I was not yet sensible how much art and study was necessary for the continual regulation of a violent passion, when a man would contain himself within the bounds of decorum and honour. This thought might probably have persuaded me not to take any other confidant than you, if I had not dreaded the rigour of your principles. I had no choice left but either of Mr de Pesses, or my brother. I had some diffidence in the fidelity of the first, because of his extraordinary attachment to you ; and I considered moreover, that for making an acquaintance with Mr de L——, and for other events that might arise, I should always draw more advantage and honour from the mediation of my brother.

I made haste then to see him, and he received the confidence I put in him with all the tokens of a lively satisfaction. I am in raptures, says he, that you have begun to think of yourself. Do not have the least suspicion that I will not aid you to the utmost of my power. If madam de L—— be such as you have described her, and disposed in the manner you flatter yourself, I shall not only consider your enterprise as the trial of a heart, which may help to shew you a very gallant man, but as an introduction itself to something solid. Is she rich ? added he. I could not give him a satisfactory answer to this question ; but an air of neatness and plenty (says I) which I saw in the house, makes me judge well of her fortune. It is enough, says George ; the ambition of a younger brother of Ireland ought to have bounds. It were only to be wished, that she was of the same religion as we. But as she may possibly change her sentiments in that particular, the main point is, that she be amiable enough to content your heart, and rich enough to provide for you an establishment. He promised me further, that before night he should be in a way to aid me either with his person or counsels. We agreed, that while he was employing himself in my service, I should return to Saïsons ; and that from the apprehension of finding you opposite to our pro-

E 4

jects,

jects, we should beforehand use all sorts of precautions to deceive you. I immediately went to give you an account of my journey to St Germain, and towards evening I took another pretence to return to Paris.

George was already far advanced. You have always shewed yourself, said he, seeing me appear, more affectionate to the dean than to me. I am answerable to you for the success of your amour, and the establishment of your fortune. In reality, as you know him to be bold and enterprising, he did more in one afternoon, than I could have expected to have accomplished by my own address in many weeks. He recounted to me, that under pretence of buying some trinkets from a merchant, whose house joined to that of Mr de L——, he dextrously got information of his affairs and correspondence; and that having understood, among other circumstances, that the governante whom he had placed over his daughter, after the death of his wife, was an old lady from Ireland. He immediately took the hint of another design, the success of which might fill me with joy. He went to inquire after this lady, having first learned her name. He gave her an account of our family, for which she expressed a great regard; and improving the thought into the inclination which people from the same country ought to shew in obliging one another, he prayed her in confidence to inform him, for some reasons which he would soon declare to her, what she knew of the character and circumstances of Mr de L—— and his daughter. She gave a very honourable account both of the one and the other; upon which George informed her, that this testimony had cured him of a mortal inquietude; that having a brother younger than himself, who had conceived an extreme passion for madam de L——, and who appeared resolved to sacrifice all other hopes of an establishment to his love, he had apprehended that his brother had given an ill turn to his views and expectations; but that far from condemning him after what he had heard, he intreated her to favour his pretensions upon occasion, and to do him all the good offices.

offices with her mistress in her power. He presented to her a diamond of some value, which she made no difficulty of receiving, and which was perhaps the thing that contributed as much as our country and name to the obtaining a declaration of the secret of madam de L——. She assured my brother, that if I was, as she had no reason to doubt, the same young man, who had for about two months past assiduously endeavoured to engage the looks of madam de L——, I ought to be highly satisfied with my lot; that my appearance, and the constancy of my application, had made a surprising impression on her; and that without doubt her passion would increase, when she came to be informed of my birth. George added, that he had pressed her to procure me the satisfaction of seeing my mistress, and that he had found her intractable upon that point. I would serve you, said she to him, but I would not betray the confidence of Mr de L——. She had the same discretion in concealing from him the adventure of the preceding day, of which his discourse with her could not give the least suspicion that he was informed of it; and she advised me to pursue the paths of honour in authorising my passion by an acquaintance with her father, who was expected at Paris in a few days. Nevertheless, she could not reject another proposal, which was, to grant himself the liberty of saluting madam de L——. She took a minute to dispose her to this visit; and the unexpected explanations which she discovered to her, obtained her consent to admit of it. In fine, George informing me of the charming qualities he had observed in madam de L——, and the tender acknowledgments he had drawn from her in my favour, finished the inflaming me to an inexpressible degree, and made me indeed the most passionate of all mortals.

Have I served you well, said he then, and do you believe me your friend? It was with difficulty I found terms to express my acknowledgments to him. Depend upon it, replied he, I will undertake to manage your acquaintance and friendship with Mr de L——; and I see nothing on any side that does not

promise as happy an end to your love as you can wish for. But, continued he, having been in a deep study for some moments, Are you so much taken up with your own concerns, that you abandon intirely the interests of poor Rose? In what situation then is her marriage with Mr de Pesses? Do you consent to this infamy? Must the caprices of the dean ruin the fortune of a girl so amiable? I must absolutely deliver her out of his hands. Consider whether you will contribute to do her this piece of service. A discourse so little expected threw me into the last confusion. In my turn I remained pensive, and like a man, as it were, in a dream; but he pressed me instantly to answer.

Indeed I at first trembled at this proposal, and all my reflections fell upon you; I could not support the thoughts of causing you so mortal a vexation as to force from you my sister again. It is not to persuade you of my sentiments that I make this protestation; my only view is to be sincere in my story. Let me not be so understood, as if I intended to cast upon George all those things which you found odious in our last resolutions. You should acknowledge it as well as I, he is honest and generous, and I owe him this justice, that if the resentment of the injury that he thought you did him had alienated him too much from you, yet he has never forbore to maintain for you the sentiments of a brother, and to consider your interests as his own. But in fine, I am less culpable than he, and I find a satisfaction in telling you so; for heaven is the witness of the sincere attachment I have always had to you, and of the torment which all your troubles have occasioned me. Let our discontents die, said I, a thousand times to George; he loves us with the extreme tenderness, and our ingratitude pierces his heart.

I interrupted Patrick a-new, and, borne down by my affliction, which was renewed by those testimonies of his, yes, dear brother, says I, embracing him, I know your heart is such as you have explained it; that there is nothing good and virtuous but what it is disposed to relish, and that it is not capable of voluntarily renouncing its duty. I begin to comprehend  
what

what it was that estranged you from me. It is a passion that you have suffered to assume too great an empire over you. You have been flattered in that to find your repose. Heaven has not permitted it, I am confident of that. A few moments of a trifling joy, and subject to a thousand changes, are not the things that compose the happiness after which your heart pants. It is made for another love, and for a felicity more perfect. Sooner or later it will obtain the knowledge and the taste of it; but go on with your relation, which I have interrupted too long.

He proceeded thus: in vain did I represent to George the repugnance I had to give you any grief. He answered, that you had not so much consideration for him, when you carried away my sister from the hotel de Carnavallet, you then left him for twenty-four hours in an inquietude which seemed little to affect you; and moreover that his views tended to nothing but the advancement of Rose and the honour of our family, as you should be obliged to confess one day or another by what he would do for her; that I should be always a witness of every step he took, and that he would begin immediately to impart a secret to me that should at once let me into his sentiments. I have commenced a strict friendship, says he, with my lord Linch, a young Irish nobleman, whose name you are acquainted with. He is rich, and his own master. I am persuaded he cannot see Rose without having an inclination for her. We must take care that nothing happens which may be an imputation to us. I confess, added he, that the picture I have drawn of her has raised an earnest desire in him to see her, and he talks of her to me incessantly. You must act your part at Saisons, by labouring to make my sister relish my project; or if any difficulty arises, at least contrive a way that I may have some conversation with her without the knowledge of Mr de Pesses or the dean.

I greedily embraced this last part of the scheme, which would relieve me from an employment for which I had no great appetite. The night being  
the

the only time that I could pitch upon to admit him secretly at Saifons, we agreed that he should be there the next night, and that I should prepare Rose for this visit. I left him as well satisfied with this promise as I was pleased with the happy news he had told me; and as there remained yet day enough to give me hopes of seeing madam de L——, I repaired to the street, where she was some time without my perceiving her at the window. She was there nevertheless, but concealed behind the curtain. I had passed near a quarter of an hour at the coffee-house door, when I thought I had discovered her by an opening she made in the curtain in moving without precaution. The fear of displeasing her, when she appeared desirous not to be seen, prevented me from saluting her; but I thought, that being favoured by the day, she might make her remarks on me with ease. I had some difficulty to moderate my transports, which were continually on the watch to betray me. In the end, putting aside the curtain she shewed herself, and I out of hand made her my acknowledgments by a bow, strongly enlivened by the impatience I had to meet this happy moment. She saluted me with civility, but without discovering any token of an intelligence between us. She then affected to turn her eyes to another side, whilst mine were constantly rivetted on her. I know not what her thoughts were at that moment; but her heart, which was so happily prepossessed in my favour, did not suffer her very long to do herself so much violence, and me so much injustice. She brought back her eyes on me again by degrees, which at length encountered with mine. We both blushed, in discovering in each others eyes all that tenderness which we were enchanted to find in them. I forgot myself in this delicious contemplation, lost in a thousand thoughts to which till now I was an utter stranger. I tasted more pleasures than I ever before had in idea, when a servant of the house coming abroad by chance left the door open. I immediately lost sight of all obstacles, and, hurried on by charms that acted upon  
all



all my senses, I crossed the street and entered into the court. I should have even gone up to her apartment, if I had not met another servant, who demanded of me my business. I remained without giving him an answer; nevertheless, in an instant I came to myself, and fearing, that after what had been given me in charge the day before, and what had been confirmed to me that present day by my brother, she would be offended at my boldness, I chose to conceal this indiscretion, by asking only for madam Gerald, which was the name of the old Irish lady, whom George had brought over to my interests.

I was introduced into a chamber, where she did not make me wait long before she appeared. I knew her to be the same lady who was the evening before with madam de L——. She would have been gone that moment; because having seen me cross the street and come directly to the house, she doubted not it was I who had inquired for her. I opened my mouth in order to excuse myself, and afterwards to let her know that I was the brother of my lord C——, to whom she had made me a promise of favouring my love. But she took me up short, and told me, that she had no need of such instructions. You are an inconsiderate young man, said she to me, to appear here before the return of Mr de L——, and I am come to reproach you with your indiscretion: But I find myself so much disposed in your favour, that I have not the power to do it. Sit you down, continued she, I will explain to you what our sentiments are here, what you have to pretend to, and in what manner you ought to conduct yourself.

We sat down. She let fall her voice, and without giving me time to thank her, you know, says she, that Mr de L—— and his daughter are Lutherans, and you are surprised without doubt to see an Irish Catholic in the house of them. I was a friend to the late madam de L——, who took me with her to Germany, where her husband was an envoy from court. We resided there many years, during which time she brought her daughter into the world. A dangerous  
curiosity

curiosity having carried Mr de L—— to make inquiries into the religion of the country, he took so great a taste for it, that he embraced it, and by an effect of the same zeal, employed all his efforts and address to gain over the mind of his spouse, whom he made also a Lutheran. Their daughter was consequently educated in the same principles. They spared no pains to inspire me with them; but the succour of heaven supported me against all sorts of seductions. I did not cease living with with them in the same amity and union, without believing that I had a right to reason upon the conduct of others; and the envoy himself, who knew my quiet and calm character, and my attachment to his family, lost nothing of the confidence which he always had in me. Some time after, he was recalled to court, where, notwithstanding all the precautions he had observed, suspicions were entertained of his change. He had voluntarily renounced his country to fix his residence and establishment in Germany, but a considerable estate that he had in France, obliged him to return there with his family, and persisting in the same notions of religion, he undertook, in order to make himself easy under the restraints to which he was obliged by the king's edicts, to render all the good offices of zeal and charity in his power to the small number of Lutherans that live at Paris: So that he is become as it were their common father, and has made a kind of church and burying place of his house.

Death robbed him of his wife about two years ago; she was not so firmly settled in his opinions, but that the approach of eternity raised in her piercing alarms. It was in one of these moments of perturbation that she opened to me her heart, with such marks of inquietude that gave me to understand, that her tenderness for her husband was the principal motive of her change. I pressed her to be reconciled to the church, and I privately procured her the aid of an ecclesiastic, who at length restored peace to her conscience. She obliged me to declare to her  
daughter

daughter in what religion she had died, and to exhort her to profit by her mother's example.

Although these last counsels of a dying mother have not made on Madam de L—— all the impressions that I could desire, yet I can make a good conjecture of her dispositions, when I see her supplicating her father to continue me about her. He loves her tenderly, and is too well satisfied with my conduct to refuse her this favour. I have held with her the place of a mother since she lost her own. The confidence and friendship she has placed in me have no bounds; she has not had these two years either thoughts or sentiments that she has not communicated to me. All my pains have been applied to wean her insensibly from her religion, sometimes by repeating to her the last words of her mother, and sometimes in raising objections and doubts, according to the measures of my own understanding: But the fear of rendering myself suspected by too ardent a zeal, and upon the whole, the discretion I am obliged to use to her father, have obliged me to moderate my exhortations and counsels. I sow; it is heaven must bless my efforts, in making me one day gather the fruits I hope for.

In fine, added madam Gerald, as it is seldom that I am absent from her, it was about two months ago that we perceived you from our windows, and remarked with what admiration you cast your eyes towards us. I did not in the least doubt but that this was the effect of the charms of my pupil, and I made war on her in banters. She granted that your diligence did not displease her, and that your demeanour gained on her mightily. I have not yet inspired her with those severe maxims, which make a young lady fear the sight of a handsome man, and which augment her danger, by giving her too much knowledge in the distrust of them; sooner or later the heart must love something; and it is not such a dangerous propensity with which modesty is obliged to be at perpetual war. It was proper that she should have clear notions given her of these things,

things, not to let her follow a blind course, and in the mean time think to fortify herself enough to stop always at just bounds. I had accustomed madam de L—— by these principles, not only not to give herself anxiety about the indeliberate movements of the heart, but never to surrender herself to them inconsiderately; and I made a better account of this sort of virtue, than of all the affected grimaces to which our sex have given that name. It was agreed then that you should please her, and I had no other objection to make to her, than the imprudence she shewed in taking a liking to a person unknown. You must continue to come regularly to the neighbouring coffee-house, or opposite to our windows. She will not once lose the opportunity of seeing you, although she will not always shew herself to you. You may keep an account of all your pains; and I must tell you, that after having considered, that a love as timorous and respectful as yours, ought to proceed from another source than lightness or libertinism, I feel myself strongly inclined to wish that your birth and character may be found answerable to what is said of you abroad. I had the same confusion in answering my ward, when she consulted me upon the progress of her love. Wait, said I, to her, time will shew whether he be worthy of you; he will find the way sooner or later to unfold himself: But remain always mistress of your heart. She assured me, that granting you were such a person as she imagines you, she would have no great pain in vanquishing her inclinations, if the event should not answer appearances; but that she should have a mortal regret to find herself deceived: And she confessed, that you appeared to be formed to make her happy.

O Gods! cried I, interrupting madam Gerald, have I been so long ignorant of my happiness? Permit me then to see her, and that I may go and die with joy and acknowledgment at her feet. No, replied she, it is a matter determined; you must not speak to her, but by the consent of her father.

But

But hearken to this that ought to sustain your hopes: since the time that she discoursed with you, and that I have spoke myself to your brother, we are resolved to do for you every thing that may contribute to render Mr de L—— favourable. He passionately loves his daughter, and has declared to her a thousand times that he would leave her at liberty to please her heart in the choice of a husband. Whatever your lot be, the want of riches shall be no obstacle. Madam de L—— is an heiress, who can make the fortune of the man she loves. There is nothing but the difference of religion that makes me dread a storm; but we have provided against every accident with a zeal that will convince you that we shall in earnest busy ourselves in your concerns. When you shall have insinuated yourself into the friendship of Mr de L——, and that we can, upon a further acquaintance better than at present, be satisfied that you merit the opinion we have conceived of you, if we do not see that he is inclined to make you happy, we shall then wait till either his death or the age of his daughter sets us at liberty. We shall be responsible to you for our perseverance. All these resolutions, added she, are taken this day. You cannot have a notion with what excess of joy we received the explications made by your brother. He presented me with a diamond, which I received as a pledge of her good faith and your's. Yesternight you saw me embarrassed; and although the advice which madam de L—— gave you to make an acquaintance with her father came from me, I was displeased with her last answer, which appeared to me to be too favourable for a person unknown. But to-day I give no further limits to your hopes, nor to the passion I have to do you service.

Ah! says I to her, kissing her hands, you do more for my happiness than I could expect from the united power of men and fortune. But do you believe I can live, if you do not grant me this moment the pleasure of seeing madam de L——, of speaking to her, of assuring her a thousand times that I adore her,

her, that I abandon to her my life and my destiny? She protested to me a-new, that it was a fruitless request; that I should not fail to come, according to custom, to the neighbouring coffee-house; and should not suffer myself to fall into despair from these counterfeit rigours; but, that they might have nothing to reproach themselves with, I should absolutely wait the return of Mr de L——, and that they wished he might readily approve of my visits. From the trouble of seeing a pleasure as it were torn from me, which I thought within my reach, and for which the transports I was in would have made me sacrifice an empire, it came into my mind, that madam Gerald who had received a diamond from my brother, might also be sensible of some liberality of this nature from me, and nothing presenting itself to my memory immediately but my share of our thirty thousand livres, I said to her, without considering any thing, that though my quality of younger brother had made me lose my share in the division of the jewels of our family, yet I had about a thousand pistoles in money, which was all I had brought from Ireland; and that this sum should be at her service, if she would procure me the satisfaction I requested, which favour she had it in her power to grant me. Whatever imprudence was in this offer, I made it from the bottom of my heart. I know not in what light it appeared to madam Gerald; though she ought to have looked upon it as sincere, yet she was so provoked, that she left me without making any answer, and immediately went up to the apartment of madam de L——, from whence she returned in about four minutes with the happy permission of conducting me to her. Come, says she, taking me by the hand, you are a lover of a character intirely new, and which well deserves that we should relax something, to prevent your death or ruin. However, as we went up stairs, she exacted from me a promise upon oath, that I should not again demand the same favour until the return of Mr de L——.

I promised my life, and every thing that might not help to diminish the pleasure I was going to enjoy ; I swear, said I to her, to obey you eternally : And seeing madam de L——, who stood expecting us, I threw myself on my knees with as much devotion as if I had been entering a church. I should not have quitted that posture, if she had not absolutely commanded me to be seated. We commenced a conversation, in which love had no other bonds than honour and modesty. But I will forbear relating the circumstances, because the severity of your maxims will not suffer you willingly to hear them. I passed two hours with madam de L——, in which I shewed nothing but one continual transport ; and in taking my leave, I carried away wherewithal to make me happy for whole ages, only from the remembrance of so much love and pleasure.

It was too late to communicate my good fortune to George. I thought of nothing but to reach Saïsons ; where, full of joy, which made me appear thoughtful and absent, I had the pleasure of seeing you attribute to my melancholly humour the most delightful meditations that could employ the mind of a lover. Rose was alone, to whom I thought proper to discover my secret, as well to flatter my own heart by imparting it, as to prepare her for the visit of my brother. I passed one part of the night in painting the charms of madam de L——, and I raised in my sister an eager desire to become her friend. As she had already trusted me with the state of her heart, and that I was convinced her sentiments for Mr de Pesses were intirely changed from what I believed she had for him in Ireland, nothing hindered me from declaring to her off-hand, that George's design was to procure her a lover. She answered me, that she would not engage in any thing without your participation. You are more prudent than I, says I to her ; but I leave your affairs to be unfolded by George, who will be here to-morrow-night, and who desires to be with you in private. We took our measures to receive him in my chamber,  
where

where she consented to be, when every body was a-bed. I left her determined to undertake nothing without consulting you, and I did not in the least oppose this resolution; but, to continue to shew you my sincerity, the interest she was ready to take in the relation of my amour, made me judge, that she would not remain always without taste for the same pleasures, and that my lord Linch was not like to meet with a repulse, if he had merit enough to please her.

I stole out the next day, to return to the source of my joy and repose. If I observed faithfully the law that madam Gerald had imposed on me, I was recompensed for this submission by other complaisances which satisfied my tenderness. I afterwards gave an account to my brother of all those circumstances to which he was before a stranger, and of the disposition of Rose to see him the night following. He promised to come at midnight to Saisons, and he recommended to me beforehand to find some pretext for going the day after to St Germain; because he had formed new views, for the explanation of which he put me off till that time.

At the hour appointed I found nothing so easy as to bring him into my chamber. My sister waited to attend him with impatience, and all the house were already in a profound sleep. You may imagine what could be the subject of their conversation. George employed all his wit to give an insinuating turn to his offers and intreaties. He did not at first openly propose that she should quit Saisons; but having mentioned my lord Linch as a certain conquest, and extolled the advantages my sister would have in marrying him, he represented to her that an affair of such importance could not be managed but at Paris: That the question was, the securing her a fortune, a rank, a title, and that such favourable opportunities did not offer every day; that when she had lived with him some time alone, she would have it more in her power than you to do justice to the innocence of his intentions and conduct, and he urged her not to give herself up so lightly to your false alarms; that he always

was



was of opinion, that you were more capable than any person to make of her a nun and a saint ; but if she was not absolutely resolved to bury herself in a cloister, she had no other choice to make, than to shew herself to the world, and to set her natural accomplishments in the point of view, which from henceforth should be her only resource ; that I myself had known the injury I had suffered in submitting to be a slave to your counsels, and that I began to find the difference in having preferred to them his own. In fine, he joined to these reasons the most tender and pressing instances. I thought Rose was vanquished ; nevertheless, she had the power to defend herself, and refusing resolutely to forsake you, she consented only to receive a visit from my lord Linch, when we could bring him to Seasons with decency.

My brother appeared satisfied with what he obtained. We went to St Germain the day following. They had already some knowledge of our domestic quarrels ; and George's design was to make our presence disperse the rumour, of which the effect could not be advantageous for us. They doubted no more of the good understanding among us, when they saw us make our appearance together at court. We were received favourably by the king, and loaded with civilities by our friends.

It was in reasoning with them upon divers projects for our establishment and fortune, that M. de Sercine, to whom George had already confided the bottom of our affairs, and who entered into the thoughts of the necessity of introducing my sister at court, offered to receive her in his house, where she might live agreeably with his wife and daughter. We accepted this proposal with acknowledgments ; and when I was alone with my brother, I asked him, if he did not hope that you yourself might be brought to approve it, and I thought it advisable to take this opportunity to reconcile us sincerely. I doubt of it, says he ; for what hope can there be of curing him of his scruples concerning balls, shews, and assemblies ? It would require some time to fortify Rose ; but accord-  
ing

ing to his notions of things, Must not a woman be always weak? We will not expose ourselves, added he, to see him confound all our new projects. We will begin by delivering her out of his hands, and by that means establish her fortune. There will be always time to reconcile us; and if after this proceeding he finds that she has yet need of his instructions, we will turn her over to his zeal.

I was so much the more easy at those specious reasons, as I saw in my lord Linch an extreme impatience to know her; and I did not in the least doubt but he would attach himself to her seriously after he had seen her. He requested the favour of my friendship, which I freely promised him in accepting of his. He was of a character lively and open, but more capable of receiving much love than of inspiring it. In my knowledge of Rose, I thought, that to make the conquest of her heart, a lover should have more shining qualities, and upon the whole more wit and nobleness of sentiments. Nevertheless, as the question was only about fortune, and that George had not spoke to him upon any other foot, I fancied that this motive might accustom her to brook him, as it had made her consent to see him.

A few days after, we improved the opportunity so luckily, that being come to Saïsons with George, he spent there a part of the afternoon. Some affairs had obliged you to retire with Mr de Pesses, and I took care the evening before to advertise my brother of your intentions. I examined curiously the impression my lord Linch had made on my sister. It was agreeable to my conjectures; that is to say, notwithstanding the passion he had all of a sudden conceived for her, she looked on him only in the light of a rich man, who would advance her to fortune. As to him, into whose discourse and motions I had made a strict scrutiny, he carried away so much love in leaving her, that I thought the establishment of Rose as infallible as George had foretold. I was exposed some days following to the perpetual solicitations of procuring for him a-new the satisfaction of seeing her;

her ; but tho' my brother joined in his intreaties, it was impossible for me to find an opportunity till the sickness of Mr de Pesses.

This accident, of which Mr de Pesses had generosity enough to conceal from you the cause, was no more than an effect of jealousy. With the pains he had taken to gain over our domestics, he had the address, upon some suspicions, to draw from them light enough to discover some part of the truth. His passion, which had for a long time mounted to an excess, incited him to some complaints, which my sister rejected perhaps with too much scorn, and which he told her could not fail to occasion his death in accomplishing the loss of all his hopes. Tho' I was irritated myself at his indiscretion, the friendship I had for him made me intreat Rose, to treat him with more indulgence during his sickness, and she was freely disposed to it from her natural goodness. But an opportunity so favourable was not neglected by my lord Linch and my brother, who were often at Saïsons, whilst your love for study engaged you among your books. They remained there a part of the night, which we passed at supper, while you gave yourself up to sleep. The recovery of Mr de Pesses interrupted a little their pleasures ; until, upon some representations from me, you prayed him forthwith to return to Paris. In fine, my lord Linch, who was absolutely devoted to Rose, proposed to us his purpose of sharing his fortune with her ; and it made a little bustle at St Germain in supplicating the king to approve of it.

I thought I was indebted to George in this, though an inconsiderate piece of complaisance, as an acknowledgment for the zeal in which he was indefatigable to serve my interest. Of all the contented hearts, mine was the most happy, seeing with the prospect of a fortune I enjoyed also the most sweet pleasures of love ; for I never passed a day but I made a trip to Paris, and there saw without restraint, or entertained madam de L——. Her father returned at the time expected. I was indebted to George for the obligation of

of procuring me his friendship, and even some claim to his acknowledgments.

As he was a man rough and passionate, whom it would have been difficult to gain by the ordinary ways, my brother made use of an innocent stratagem, of which the success surpassed our expectations. Having been assured of the day of his arrival, he made two of my lord Linch's footmen, and two of his own, dress themselves in the habit of soldiers, and arming them with pistols, posted them on the high-road, with orders to attack his chaise briskly. We were about an hundred paces from them, so that spurring our horses we arrived to his aid at a time he thought himself in extreme danger; some shots of our pistols fired in the air, with other marks of resistance and fighting, easily persuaded him that we had exposed our lives in his defence, and that he was indebted to us for his. We found him speechless and trembling in his chaise: But when he saw us masters of the field of battle, he appeared lively, touched at the service he had received. He pressed us to inform him of the names of his deliverers; he told us his own, and, in fine, offered us the disposition of his fortune and life, which we had preserved. My brother answered him modestly; and to give heaped measure to the obligation, we conducted him even to the gates of Paris, where in spite of his instances we refused to let him know our house, but promised him not to be long without paying a visit to his.

His daughter and madam Gerald were in the secret of our enterprise. He did not fail to give them a relation of the danger he had escaped, and to boast of the service we had done him. Madam Gerald, who being a lady from Ireland, must naturally be acquainted with our names, did not fail to lay hold on the opportunity of making our panegyrick. She exhausted herself more particularly on mine; in-somuch, that waiting on him two hours after, we found in him all the fervency of acknowledgment and esteem. He presented his daughter to us,  
recom-

recommending to her to look upon us for the time to come as his best friends. He made us promise not to make any distinction between our house and his, but that we should take the free command of all that belonged to him. I began to think my good fortune solidly established. Madam de L——, being as much charmed as I was with the success of our artifice, thought herself intirely authorized to deliver herself up to her tenderness. We had a liberty of seeing one another, the opportunity of knowing one another, and a thousand new reasons for our love. If prudence did not permit us then to make proposals to her father, every thing at least gave us room to hope for a happy opportunity to come. It is true, we every day observed sufficient measures for disguising our love; but this was by the advice of George himself, and madam Gerald, who seeing Mr de L——'s friendship for me increase every day, imagined that he would come to the pass of offering his daughter to me of his own accord. I had it more than once in my thoughts at a time when every thing favoured my views, and in which you could not condemn my measures and conduct, to discover to you this intrigue, in order to authorize it by your consent. I proposed it to George, who obstinately forbid it. He made me apprehensive lest difference of religion should give the alarm to your zeal, and make you traverse our projects.

This was our situation when you took the resolution of going to court. I gave advice of your departure to my brother; and it appeared to him an opportunity proper for the design he had always formed of taking away my sister from you. He had till now only given her a slender taste of his intentions, in offering to conduct her to St Germain; but he had not the least doubt, if he could engage Mr de Serceine to go to Saïsons with his wife and daughter, but that the presence and the company of these two ladies would make a great change in her resolutions. I need not report to you what followed; you may judge of it by the circumstances, of which you were

a witness. In my turn, I suffered myself to be overcome by the same instances which had vanquished my sister. In truth, I was in some confusion at their proceedings, when I perceived your melancholy: But your appearing to have assumed a more calm air, as soon as you heard what Mr de Sercine had offered, I fancied to myself that you approved his reasons, and that we should not see a guide, such as you, forsake us without regret. I even took your reproaches for counsels which had less relation to the present than to the time to come. If you had not believed these excuses sincere, I was determined to come at least often to Saïsons to see you, that you should have had little room to be sensible of my absence.

In fine, we separated ourselves from you. It is impossible you could have supported our absence without resentment; since it forthwith made you take the resolution of abandoning us. But if you thought us so culpable, if you wished perhaps that heaven would defeat our designs, and by some chastisement make us sensible of the levity of our conduct, you have not been overmuch mistaken. You see me here loaded with my own griefs, and with those of a brother and sister yet more unhappy, who demand from you that succour, which they can expect from none but you. George at the bottom of a dungeon, from whence he can never get out; Rose in a cloister, where her inclinations never led her, and which necessity nevertheless ought to hinder her from forsaking, as long as she shall love virtue and honour; myself stripped naked,—— alas! of all the happiness which love had promised me; for I slight all other riches, which I could not possess with that only happiness that made me love them. But why do I seek beforehand to soften your compassion, when my recital demands more than ever your attention.

Upon quitting Saïsons, we came to Paris, where George's project was to make my sister spend some days to put her in a condition to appear honourably at court. Mr de Sercine with his family, and my  
lord

lord Linch, in the evening, retook the road to St Germain. We lodged with George, who had lately taken a fit and commodious house. Having a design to pay my ordinary visit to madam de L——, I purposed to my sister to gratify the impatience she had shewed of being acquainted with her, and my brother advised her to accompany me, whilst he employed himself on some other business. We found madam de L—— alone, and the sight of Rose, which I had a long time given her hopes of, filled her with pleasure. Vivacity and joy animated our conversation. If I was charmed in making a sister so amiable acquainted with my mistress, I had it not less in my power to justify in the eyes of Rose, all the merit which she a hundred times made me observe in madam de L——. I prided myself in her extreme tenderness, and abandoned myself to all mine, with that air of toying which makes the charms of an amour innocent. I received from madam de L—— a thousand new testimonies of affection, which it seemed she was willing to make a merit of with my sister. Never two lovers appeared so satisfied with one another: Rose reproached us agreeably with the excess of our passion. We answered her in the same tone, that this same excess should serve her for an excuse. She continued for some time to make war upon us with her railleries, and we defended ourselves without appearing disposed to submit to her reasons. But I thought I perceived in the end, that the gaiety which Rose affected was forced. I even discovered an air of heaviness and melancholy in her eyes. During the time she laboured to make the conversation agreeable, she was possessed with some reverie, and the half of her attention was employed on something that passed within herself. I feared that this sense of tenderness might have become troublesome and impertinent to her, and although I could not think her capable of acting cross purposes out of season, yet it came into my mind, that an excessive delicacy might make her

disapprove our not observing more distance with madam de L—— in the first visit. Her absence and inattention afterwards increased, even to the making her keep silence, and sometimes losing the thread of our discourse: I judged that she was entirely fatigued with it and would be glad to retire. She consented to it in effect at the first proposal.

We did not find George at our return to his house, and we received a note from him at supper time, in which he excused himself for not being able to bear us company the first day of our arrival. He was detained against his will by the duke of ——, his friend and protector. We shall be then more easy, says I to my sister, and in reality I wished to be so, to entertain myself freely with her. I did not yet let her know, that I had perceived a change in her humour at madam de L——'s, and how I had proposed to make a strict friendship between them, with the hope of drawing from thence much advantage for my interests; but I was truly afflicted, that appearances had answered my intentions so ill on the part of Rose. I supped alone with her, and waited till she should explain herself upon what might have displeased her in the conversation with madam de L——, or at least till she made me some overture to question her upon it. She recollected herself in a few rambling encomiums on the beauty and sweetness of madam de L——, without forgetting the air of pensiveness which she had discovered in our visit. In fine, being desirous to have the matter cleared up, I demanded of her precisely what had caused the alteration I had perceived in her. She scrupled to answer me upon this head. I pressed her: If it be any thing, says I, that interests madam de L——, how can you refuse to let me know it? I have told you already that she loves you tenderly, and that she would not have less vexation than I to find she had displeased you: She remarked to me your inquietude at parting.



I importuned her with other reasons, which she resisted a long time; in the mean time I could observe that her heart was full, and that she wanted to disburthen it. I complained that she failed in her confidence in me, who always had a particular affection for her, and that she also always loved me with a kind of first or tenderest love. Very well! says she, covering her face with one hand, what will it avail me to tell you that I cannot love my lord Linch, and that I would rather choose to die than be obliged to marry him? You love then another, interrupted I out of hand. No, replied she, but I perceive, that I cannot be happy with a man whom I cannot love: You force me to discover to you the weakness of my heart, added she sighing: I cannot see madam de L—— so contented with her tenderness and yours, without being jealous of a happiness which is not made for me. How happy is she, and you also! My heart is as tender as her's, and I have no less hope to find a little sweetness in love: They think to make me marry a man, for whom I have not the least taste: Must I then pass all my life without loving, lament my fortune, be weary of my duty, envy all the women who extol their tenderness to me, and do a cruel violence on my own? What an endless torment will this be? And you, Patrick, who say you love me, and who has torn from me this confession of my pains, will you give no assistance to my deliverance?

I hearkened to her with extreme astonishment. But, dear sister, says I, who talks of forcing you to any thing, or of obliging you to marry Linch against your will? You must own that these are the first marks you have given of your repugnance. Is it not strange that your aversion has sprung up so lately, or that you have concealed it so long? She assured me that fear alone had tied her tongue, and that after having refused Mr de Pesses, under pretence that he was deficient in birth, she had not courage to reject a man of the consequence of my lord Linch.

I answered, however it be, I, who prefer contentment of heart to fortune, will make no scruple at all to promise you, that you shall not marry any person without your consent, and I engage to make George embrace the same way of thinking. As I made an end of speaking, I heard a noise in a closet adjoining to the chamber we were in; and the door of it opening with violence, we were much surprised to see my lord Linch come out of it. He had returned to Paris, during the time of our visit to madam de L——, and seeing me come in only with my sister, he had a mind to have the pleasure of hearing and surprising us. His curiosity cost him dear. He had heard our conversation to the least word. A just despair not permitting him to constrain himself longer, he came and threw himself with a furious air into an elbow chair which stood opposite to Rose. We all three remained a long time in a profound silence. In the end I began to speak with some confusion. My lord, says I, you cannot but imagine, that we did not think you so near, and that we are a little perplexed at this scene: But since by chance you have heard what we should have had some pain to declare to you, I have no doubt but that you have all the complaisance for my sister, which a man of honour ought to have for her sex, and that you will give her the liberty she desires. He appeared for some moments irresolute; but all of a sudden addressing himself to her — No, madam, says he, I shall not have that silly complaisance which you expect. You are mine by your own consent, by the promise of your brother, and by the authority of the king himself. I will make the best of such just pretensions, and will not be fooled with impunity. Rose was out of all countenance, and got up to retire. He threw himself bluntly in her way, protesting that she should not leave the room till the return of my brother, of whom, says he, I will expect an explanation of such a ridiculous procedure. This brutality put me in a passion. I told him in a very high voice, that it would suffice if I gave him all the explanation he desired, and that I would begin  
by

by maintaining that my sister was intirely at her liberty. Some remains of discretion made him apparently calm his transport. In a softer voice he asked me if I knew where George was. I told him that he was at supper with the duke of ———; upon which he left us without reply, and set out to find him.

Rose had a just foresight of the unhappy consequences of this difference. She pressed me with tears to forget the confidence she had placed in me, and to suffer her to put on those chains, the weight of which she would labour to conceal to her grave. I confess, says she, that I have had no moderation in my complaints. ~~We are made to be the victims of men.~~ Ah! what does it concern the good order of the universe, whether the heart of a woman be in quiet! What do you say? says I. It seems on the contrary to me, that the weakness of your sex, which obliges you always to a dependence on ours, puts us under a necessity to make it our study to consult your happiness; and that, independent of our own natural inclinations, reason and justice ought to influence us to comfort and relieve the weakest. I use this reason only to let you see, that I do not speak like a man prejudiced or blinded by the natural affections of a brother, or by those of a lover: For if one was to set a value on your charms, and the sweetness that your conversation diffuses on society, none but a barbarian could please himself in grieving a woman, or find satisfaction in his heart at the expence of yours. But of whatever principles my lord Linch is at the bottom, you may depend upon this, that your inclinations shall be free, and that I shall one day see you as happy as I am. In reality, loving with the greatest tenderness, and knowing nothing so sweet as the pleasure of giving one's self up to an innocent passion, I vowed at all hazards to procure her a happiness, of which she appeared to have so great a sense.

We were yet talking upon our adventure, when George came in, and inquired of the servants with some eagerness, if we were by ourselves. He came

up to us immediately, and with a disturbed look desired us to acquaint him without disguise what had passed in his absence. I satisfied him. The relation my lord Linch had given him was exact, seeing it agreed precisely with mine. George had no scruple in embracing that side which appeared agreeable to his honour and friendship. He told us, there was no thinking more of my lord Linch, since he was displeasing to Rose; nor had she occasion to grieve herself for concealing till now her disgust, since what was done could not be repaired. But our difficulty, says he, is to disengage ourselves honourably, at least in the opinion of the public. He moreover informed us, that Linch having expostulated with him in very smart terms, he thought it incumbent on him to listen with patience, and to desire time for clearing up the matter; that he had promised to write to him the next day, and to lay before him plainly, what he had to depend upon; that knowing him to be fiery and passionate, he did not in the least doubt but he would take all sorts of methods to revenge himself, and that the wrong being offered by us, we should be under a necessity, in order to keep fair with the public, to conduct ourselves with moderation. Rose importuned us again not to expose ourselves, for her sake, to consequences which she dreaded. But my brother was as incapable as I to constrain her inclinations.

He wrote to Linch the day following, and we joined in opinion to give a civil turn to our excuses. We were some days without receiving any answer. It was in this interval that Mr de Pesses informed us of your departure, with a thousand circumstances that made us reflect with great severity on our own conduct. Under the inquietude that Rose was already, this new stroke made her fall down in a swoon, and lose her senses. I was as much touched to the quick as she, and even George appeared to be so much struck, that he would have taken post to follow you, and to persuade you to change your resolution, if we had not been told at the same time,  
that

that there was little hopes to overtake you, seeing you had began your journey four days before. With what bitterness did we not recollect our own ingratitude and your tenderness, in all the conversations that I had with my sister! I had, as well as she, a foresight of the misfortunes that threatened us. Even the consolations of madam de L——, whom I made a confidante of my grief, did not restore tranquillity to my heart. It was not that she lost the absolute empire she had over my pains and my pleasures, (alas! my love was never before so perfect) but she took a share herself in my fears. I was tortured without knowing for what; and, in the involuntary disturbance of my mind, I thought I had reason to tremble for all that was most dear to me.

Nevertheless, receiving no answer from Linch, we began to think that he had chose to revenge himself by forgetfulness, and we prepared to conduct Rose to St Germain; when a gentleman of Ireland, who made himself known to us by his name, sent us two letters, one directed to my brother, and the other to me. I opened mine with some movements of fear, which could not but increase at the reading of every line. Linch, from whom it came, thanked me with a bitter irony for the good offices I had done him with his mistress, and informed me, that thinking himself under an obligation to do me service for service, he had taken good measures to put a stop to my further happiness with mine. He explained to me the means he had used, seeing he had a heart, he said, incapable of treachery. He had informed Mr de L—— the evening before of all the circumstances of my intrigue with his daughter; the state of my fortune; that is to say, my poverty, which made me with good reason wish for a marriage capable to repair it; the true title by which I had obtained his friendship, in raising pretended assassins against him, who were in no more danger than Linch himself, and who had served him very happily in procuring me the honour of his acquaintance; in

fine, he acquainted him with a thousand things, under a turn so odious that must of necessity infallibly ruin me in the opinion of Mr de L——. He did not doubt at all, added he, but that my wit and address would make me great advantages from all these articles; but he declared in the mean time that he was forced to strike the blow. The letter, addressed to my brother was shorter. It was only a plain challenge, wherein the time and place of combat were appointed: So that George had no need but at a single cast of his eye to read it; and hastening to give an answer before I had finished the reading of my letter, he assured the messenger that we would be exact to the appointment.

It was now eight o'clock in the morning, and we were to meet at ten. My brother told me coldly, that he was vexed at this accident, for that it tended to throw all our affairs into confusion. See here, says I, which of us has most reason to despair? I gave him my letter to read; and he confessed with an air of calmness, that I had every thing to fear for the success of my amour. In reality my situation was so grievous, that it was impossible for me even to see madam de L——, to know from her at least what effects the malignity of my enemy had produced in her father: for the hour approached, and we had a good way to go to the field of battle. In the mean time I was provoked at the coldness with which George looked on my troubles. You do not lament me, says I, you do not lament Rose, who is ruined without resource, if the fortune of arms declares against us. He answered me, that on occasions of this nature, tenderness would be unprofitable, and that honour not suffering us to come late to the field, we ought to postpone all other thoughts till after the decision of our quarrel. Cruel necessity obliged me to follow his counsel. We embraced one another and went out. Rose, who was yet in bed, had not the least knowledge of our departure.

Our enemies were already in the field. They were waited on by two servants, who held their  
horses;

horses; and we were on foot without any attendants. But the intrepidity of George not making an account of numbers, he accosted them with his sword in hand, without yet knowing how many we should have to fight. In the mean time my lord Linch gave orders to his servants to withdraw; and seeing us on foot, if you are fortunate, says he, I make you a present of my horses to forward your escape. This generous care dissipated our suspicion.

He pointed with his hand, that it was with me he desired to measure swords. We fought fiercely, and I parried some thrusts made with such fury, that I could easily see he aimed them at my life. At length I was wounded in the arm. My brother, who was engaged with the other, having seen the colour of my blood, observed no more measures, and throwing himself upon his adversary, gave him a thrust in the stomach, that brought him down dead at his feet. I saw that he ran to my succour, but whether fear had enfeebled Linch, or that I was inspired with an emulation to conquer without the help of a second, I roused up my resolution, and at the same moment gave my adversary so deep a wound in the thigh, that being no longer able to stand, he sat down on the ground, and gave me up his sword. I returned it immediately. Shame made him hold down his eyes for some moments; but seeing us call his servants to take care of him, he generously renewed to us the offer of his horses, if we thought them necessary for our safety.

Seeing the necessity he had of them himself, our generosity would not give us leave to embrace his offer. Besides, whatever danger we had to fear in Paris, we were obliged to return there for reasons too powerful to suffer us to quit it so soon. We were returning, when finding himself weakened by loss of blood, and beginning to fear that his wound was mortal, he sent his servants to call us back. The impatience we had to recover Paris did not hinder us returning from a good distance, and we found in him, in reality, a paleness and feebleness, that made us have a bad  
opinion

opinion of his life. He commanded his servants to remove at some distance, and conjured us with a dying voice, from the confidence he placed in our honour, to be the depositaries of a secret, which was of equal importance to religion and our country, and which might even help to obtain our pardon for his death and that of Plunket (for so his friend was called) and might be some expiation for the hatred and evil which he would have done us. Since death, continued he, has put Plunket and me in the condition of things passed away, I must inform you, that we have been in possession of an immense treasure, which has lain hid for a long time in our houses, and which my father and his have considerably augmented by their own care. The principal part of it consists of vessels and reliques of gold and silver, which before the reformation belonged to many episcopal churches and a great many rich abbeys of Ireland. The tumults of wars, and the fear of all the evils that have since happened, obliged at that time a great number of prelates and Catholic lords to seek for a place of security wherein to deposit so much riches; and the situation of the demains of our ancestors being judged proper to deposit this trust in, they were removed in the night into a vault hollowed for that purpose in the middle of a vast forest. Though the fact was known to a great number of people, yet the secret of the place only remained in our two houses. In fine, losing all hopes of the re-establishment of our religion, since the Protestant branch has been fixed on the throne, my father and Plunket had formed a design of removing this treasure, from henceforth of no benefit to Ireland, into the hands of king James, to be applied to such uses as should be agreeable to his piety and wisdom. Their zeal at the same time induced them to levy great sums of money among the Catholics of the country, which were designed for the support of the court, and which are lodged in the same vault. They prepared themselves to take a journey to St Germain, to receive the king's orders upon the means of transporting into  
France



France this mass of wealth, when the death of my father put a stop to the project. To this minute the secret, and the duty of executing the trust, is lodged in our breasts, and it was with these views that I came here with Plunket some months past. The king is informed of the motive of our journey, and waits only for favourable circumstances to make use of our offer; but he is ignorant in what place the treasure is concealed. Here are the tokens, added Linch, taking a memorandum out of his pocket, take it; Plunket has a duplicate of it. We took this precaution to secure us against all manner of accidents. Make such use of it as you think proper for your safety, your fortune, and your honour. His strength failed him after so long a relation, and he made us only a sign to take the duplicate of the memorandum out of Plunket's pocket; then having protested to us in a few words, that he forgave us his death, he left us at liberty to retire. We could not refuse to give him some marks of our regret and acknowledgment: But our own affairs demanding all our attention, we left him in the hands of his servants, to return in speed to Paris.

Though we were strangers in France, yet we were not ignorant of the inflexible rigour of justice there against duels, and we conceived that the most safe course we had to take was to seek immediately of getting into some private place for shelter. Nevertheless, two interests so urgent as those of friendship and love claimed a preference to our own. Rose, who had no knowledge of our misfortune, could not be abandoned to herself without succour, and without advice; and I would a thousand times have exposed my life rather than be long ignorant how I stood in the heart of madam de L—— and in the thoughts of her father. As there was but small appearance, that the noise of our duel should be of a sudden published, we flattered ourselves that we should have time enough to satisfy these two cares. My brother undertook to return to his own house, while I should go to Mr de L——'s. He proposed to  
regulate

regulate matters with Rose, in what manner she should conduct herself, and to take a part of our money, which he had brought from Saisons to Paris. He then was to go to the duke of ———, where I promised to rejoin him, and where we were to form other resolutions.

We did not part without embracing tenderly; and recommending to each other not to lose the sight of danger, and to turn every moment to account. My brother hitherto affected a resolute and unshaken air, and I laboured to imitate him: But I gave the lie to these resolutions by the trouble of my heart, which communicated itself even to my looks and the sound of my voice. Besides the horror of a bloody duel, which I had just come from, I trembled at what I had at that instant to fear in the place to which I was going; and all my losses appeared before my eyes, before I knew what they were. George, who perceived it, exhorted me to better hopes, and made me promise, that let things turn out how they would, I would not fail to rejoin him. But he did not foresee either my misfortune or his own.

I came to the door of Mr de L ———, which I found shut, as the windows were also, with all the appearances of a deserted house. I knocked fearfully; and when it was opened, I saw a man appear, to whose countenance I was an utter stranger. I took him for a new domestic. After asking me my name, he shewed me into the porch which gave an entry to the corridor that led to the cellar. I there found four men, whom I knew no more than the first, and who seized me by the arms, although without using any violence. They took away my sword, and having led me to the end of the gallery, they let my arms loose, entreating me civilly to go down with them. I asked them what I ought to think of this reception, and what their design was. They exhorted me to fear nothing.

We went down to the same cellar where I was before. It was not long before I saw Mr de L ——— enter, followed by his daughter and madam Gerald.

I began

I began to speak to her a few words, which he interrupted, recommending to me to keep silence a moment. He had some flambeaux lighted, but not a great many. Mr de L—— made me come near a table, about which all the spectators were ranged in order. He placed his daughter opposite to me, and drawing his sword out of the scabbard, he pointed it all of a sudden at my breast. Fear and tenderness made his daughter throw out a piercing cry. He in a severe tone commanded her to be silent ; and addressing himself to me, you made your jest of frightening me, says he, in a fierce tone, it is but just that I should have the same pleasure in my turn : But although I have no design of taking away your life, if you obey me, yet you may reckon yourself among the number of the dead, who rest in this cellar, if you make the least difficulty of satisfying my desires. Then explaining to me his will, you have deceived me, continued he, you have seduced the mind of my daughter, you have exacted from her oaths of love and fidelity to you ; which she objects in justification of her refusal to obey me : I expect that you on the spot disengage her from all her promises, and renounce all sorts of rights that you pretend to her : If you a moment hesitate in doing this, you are a dead man.

I turned towards madam de L—— my eyes, to read the motions of her heart in her's. Her paleness and tears, which the darkness had at first hindered me from perceiving, gave me sufficiently to know that she had been prepared for this scene by persecutions, which her love for me had made her resist. Was my whole life sufficient to repay those precious marks of love and constancy ? I had felt perhaps some fear at the first motion of the sword ; but not listening more to any thing than a love capable of making me dare death and torments, I answered with a courage and steadiness, to which Mr de L—— gave no attention, that he was the master of my life, since I saw myself without defence ; that with the possession of a heart which he would force  
me

me to renounce, death had nothing in it terrible to me, but which I would go in search of willingly, should I have the misfortune to lose the only happiness that could make me wish to live; so that in one or the other chance his vengeance would be frustrated, if it gave him room to hope any thing from his menaces; but if he would hearken to reason, he would treat me perhaps with more humanity: That my birth and the honour of my views did not in the least merit his hatred or contempt. — He interrupted me by swearing a-new, that he was going to drive his sword into my heart; and I did not know to what mischief the violence of his temper had carried him, if his daughter, from whom the fright had already taken her voice and strength, had not all at once fallen down into a swoon void of all senses. He loved her. This sight gave another turn to his mind. He hastened to go and succour her. It is probable I might have had the power to escape in the disorder, which continued some minutes, but I rejected a thought so mean. Upon the whole, during the danger to which every-body thought the life of madam de L—— exposed, I would immediately have flown to rescue her from it, without thinking of my own, if her father had not had the barbarity to push me back as soon as he saw me approach her.

Madam Gerald laid hold of the opportunity of this interval to tell me in Irish, that she was surprised to see me sacrifice my life, and put that of madam de L—— in danger, for a silly chimera of the Lutheran principles, which no way concerned my honour or love; that being sure of being beloved, I risked nothing in renouncing those rights, which all the world could not make me lose, and of which my mistress was as jealous as I: In fine, she left it to me to consider how madam de L—— could be less mine by this excuse, and to reflect on what she suffered the whole night in preserving herself for me; and she warned me seriously, that the only means of stilling the tempest, was to give way to the passion of Mr de L——. In reality, he no sooner saw his daughter—

out.

out of danger, than he took up his sword again with the same fury. It is you, cried he, that causes me such pains as I never felt before; but if you will still continue obstinate, I will pierce your heart this moment. He stretched out his arm, and looked on me with an air that confirmed his menace. His daughter, ready to fall again into a fainting fit, out of which she had just recovered, spoke to me in a feeble and trembling voice, Eh! Mr have you no thought at all of your life! I own my perturbation was extreme. I would willingly have followed the advice of madam Gerald, were it only to deliver madam de L—— from the mortal situation in which I saw her; but my heart and my tongue equally refused to make a declaration, which seemed to me to be dishonourable, because it was forced. I was indeed convinced of the constancy of my mistress, but it was my own delicacy I had to conquer, without making any account that what was wrung from me with such a frightful violence, could not appear of so little importance as madam Gerald would persuade me. Nevertheless, I could not at all resist the four words which I had heard; I looked upon them as a command, to which all my difficulties were to give way. You have prevailed, says I to her father, I consent to all that you require. He was not at all contented with a declaration so uncertain. He made me repeat after him the same expressions which he had already used; and he obliged me to confirm them by an oath. Then turning to his daughter, you are freed, says he, from your engagements, I take all the assembly to witness it. As to what remains, proceeds he, addressing himself to me, if you think to betray me in order to revenge yourself, I declare to you, that having always paid obedience to the king's arrests, and having never yet joined in any other act of religion than burying some dead, I little fear your resentment. I contented myself with answering, that he was badly acquainted with my principles. The same person, who had brought me in, desired me immediately to retire. I had scarce the time to express to madam de L——

by a few tender looks, that the fidelity which she had obliged me to violate outwardly had taken sanctuary in the bottom of my heart, from whence it should never escape. I was conducted to the gate, where they delivered me my sword, and gave me liberty to go away.

Although nothing could equal my consternation after so melancholy an adventure, yet I carried away with me at least the comfort of believing that my mistress was faithful, and the hopes of seeing her again speedily, maugre all obstacles; for madam Gerald had found means of making me such a promise secretly. Moreover, the more I reflected on the whimsical renunciation which had been extorted from me, the less I found in it any subject worthy of giving me vexation. According to any sense that Mr de L—— could put upon them, and even according to the strictest idea that I could form to myself of his views, it was certain that my oath did not bind me to any thing for the future; and that in giving up to his daughter those rights which I had in her heart, I was not at all deprived of those which she should begin a-new to grant me by the constancy of her love. At the first instant, says I, that I shall have the happiness of seeing her again, I shall obtain from her a thousand new testimonies of her tenderness and fidelity. We shall lay up our chains: we shall then form new ones, if we could flatter ourselves to have broke the first; and we shall have for our last resort, as we had always proposed, the expectancy of the death of her father, or of that age which would make the daughter mistress of herself.

It was heaven that thus turned my reflections on the most favourable side. Its goodness suspended the black preconceptions that had disturbed me for many days, to leave me the liberty of thought, which I found necessary in the greatest of all our misfortunes. I had promised my brother to rejoin him at the duke of ——'s, whose hotel we hoped would serve us at all times for a sanctuary. It was near two hours since we parted, and I had no doubt but he

was

was already there. Nevertheless, as these last ideas, with which I was filled, made me almost forget the peril, I could not pass the street where his house stood without having a desire to go into it. I should have gone directly in without any expectation of finding him there, if I had not met Mr de Pesses, who taking me by the arm, recovered me out of this thoughtless reverie. Heaven! says he, where are you going? how happy am I in having perceived you! and without giving me time to answer, he hurried me into a hackney coach, which he had already in waiting, and drove off instantly. How happy am I! repeated he again, embracing me. I judged that you might appear again in this street, and I have been half an hour waiting for you.

The confidence I had in his friendship would have made me discover to him our troubles, if he had not been before informed of them; but his discourse having made me see that he already knew them, I asked him in haste, if he had seen my brother. Alas! no, answered he. But before you demand any explanations, suffer me to carry you to a place, where you may hear them without danger. This answer, and his refusal to carry me to the duke's hotel, gave me an insight into our misfortune. He could not however disown but my brother was in custody. Fraternal tenderness made me cast out a doleful cry, which it was impossible to restrain. I would have gone to his aid, without so much as knowing to what place I should go, or on what side I should turn. Mr de Pesses had a great difficulty to stop me. In fine, having made me understand, that violent remedies were now fruitless, he informed me, that George, being impeached in all appearance by the servants of my lord Linch, was surprised in his house, where he had the imprudence to continue an hour, and was carried to the Bastille. In going away, he had obtained the liberty to advertise the duke of ——— of his misfortune. This lord, who knew where his house was, immediately went to it, to offer his first services to Rose; but his visit and proposals had without doubt

doubt displeased my sister, since notwithstanding the reasons which might take away any desire of addressing herself to Mr de Pesses, she chose by a letter to lay open her situation to him, who was in a manner the only acquaintance she had in Paris. Mr de Pesses, in giving me this relation, could not conceal his joy. It was my good fortune, says he, which made her think of me. I flew to her; and found there the duke, though but little satisfied, since after some cold thanks which she gave him on my arrival, she determined to withdraw.

They having already put the king's seal on every thing that belonged to you, and four guards being planted in the house, I immediately proposed to your beautiful sister, continued de Pesses, to permit me to conduct her to the house of a lady who was my friend, where she should be received with all manner of care and respect; but her pleasure was, that I should immediately look out for you; and fearing lest you should return to the house where the guards were placed, perhaps with the intention of waiting for you, I thought it best to watch with a coach at the end of the street.

I thanked him for his zeal, and thinking that every moment I passed in afflicting myself would be a loss to our interests, I drove from me every thing that might take up my attention from what I owed to a perplexity so urgent. On our arrival at the place which Mr de Pesses had chose for my sanctuary, I sent him for my sister. He gave her great comfort, in acquainting her that I was in safety; but he could not persuade her to accept of any other retreat than a convent. Far from condemning this resolution, I looked upon it as the only choice agreeable to her honour, especially when (being apprised that the duke had offered her a house, an equipage, and great appointments) I considered to what perils her prudence would be exposed in any other place than a cloister. Mr de Pesses conducted her to an English nunnery, where he had the generosity to pay before-hand a share of her pension. From thence he went to the  
Bastile,



Bastile, but could not obtain leave to see my brother ; nevertheless, he did not lose all hopes of it, as soon as he could get an order from court. He returned to me in the evening with these accounts. I conjured him to add full measure to his kindnesses, by going to St Germain without a moment's loss of time ; for I thought it a matter of great importance to prepossess all the friends we had in our favour, by a sincere relation of the adventure. I wrote myself to Mr de Sercine, to engage him in doing us his good offices with the king ; and I recommended to Mr de Pesses, to assure him of the reasons we had to rely upon the protection of that prince.

I remained a prey to my fears until his return ; which he did not do till the following evening. His tranquillity appeared to carry a good omen. In reality I received from his relation all the consolation of which I was capable amidst so many inquietudes. He had seen not only Mr de Sercine and all our friends, but the king himself, whom the circumstances of our misfortune had inspired rather with compassion than anger ; and, what made me take up yet more hopes, he assured me, that my lord Linch though extremely weak with the loss of blood, was not in any danger. Notwithstanding the death of Plunket, I did not at all doubt, that having been forced to fight, and having defended ourselves with honour, king James would have easily granted us his pardon, if we had been in England ; but being in France, the rights of protection we had acquired there subjected us to the laws of the country, and that it was at the court of Versailles we had need of protection : Nevertheless I imagined, that if that of St Germain was gracious to us, we should find more favour at the court of France with a recommendation so powerful. It was with this view that I thought proper to begin my solicitations on that side. To neglect nothing, I prayed Mr de Pesses to wait on the duke of ———, who I did not think would be so cooled by the repulse of my sister, as to refuse employing his interests for us. He went about it immediately, and the assurances of zeal and friendship,

ship, which he received, served to render my mind more easy. We agreed to write to my brother, to relieve him from any inquietude, by informing him that our affairs had already taken a happy turn. Mr. de Pesses undertook this trouble, in regard the sight of my handwriting might have exposed me to some new peril.

This interval of hope was a further favour of God, who would not that his trials should surpass my strength, and who was pleased favourably to afford me some moments of repose, after the most violent agitations. If I waited every minute the return of Mr. de Pesses, I had a thousand other reasons for my impatience to know the success of his journey. The condition in which I left madam de L——, my longing to see her again, my desire of being informed of what madam Gerald promised to explain to me, were so many subjects of restlessness, that had made me ponder more than once, if I should not venture out of my retreat, in contempt of danger, to satisfy my curiosity and my love: in fine, as I had proposed to charge de Pesses with this commission, I had no sooner ended that part that related to my brother, than I confided to him the other embarrassments of my heart. There was nothing to do but immediately to see madam Gerald, to inform her of my circumstances, and to know of her if I might be admitted to the conversation of madam de L—— at home, or in any other place. Nothing being a difficulty to the zeal of de Pesses, he promised to satisfy me with diligence, and I saw him indeed return sooner than I expected. But instead of having seen madam Gerald, he brought me only a letter from her, which informed me in four lines, that she had departed the same day, with madam de L——, being committed to the conduct of two men, and that not having time to explain herself further, she promised to write to me from the first place she should have the liberty to stop at. She added at the close of her letter, that she was mistaken if they would not convey her to Germany; but that in whatever place they forced her to live, she promised to write

write to me, and madam de L—— to love me with a constancy which she proposed as a pattern to mine.

Alas! my dear brother, your piety makes you too unconcerned, and your mind is too much superior to the weakness of love, to enable you to conceive all that was cruel and intolerable for me in this news. You see in it her departure, her journey, even the tokens of remembrance and fidelity, and you would ask me what reasons I have to deliver myself up to the last despair. But you do not know, that the sovereign good of a lover is the presence of the person beloved: You are ignorant, that there can be no state of repose for a heart without the object in which it lives and breathes; that without the pleasure at least of seeing, without a comfort so necessary, life is a languor, a lassitude, a poison, an impatience, a—— ah! you do not know the delights nor the torments of love. And then can I have no reason to apprehend why madam Gerald flattered me with a vain hope? Cannot I foresee, that the same rigour which forced them away against their hopes, would employ all arts to hinder them from writing to me, or me from receiving their letters; that I should never be able to discover the place of their abode, and that consequently I should be abandoned, betrayed, lost without resource and without consolation.

I saw in one instant the full extent of my misfortune. In vain did I demand of de Pesses those éclaircissements, which I could not receive from him, nor from the servant who had put the letter into his hands. All the family of Mr de L——— was in my interest; but this reason that had made him take care to disperse his people in the evening, to forward the design he had executed in the cellar, had further obliged him to conceal his daughter's journey till the moment of her departure. Madam Gerald had with difficulty found time to write me two words: she had trusted her letter to a boy, whose address and fidelity she knew, and who had the consideration to wait continually at the gate to give it to me,

or

or to those who should come for it, in my name. I saw him the night following, but could not get from him any further information. Near four months have since elapsed, and though all my pains and the eagerness of Mr de Pesses could not afford me a safe opportunity of stepping out of such a fatal obscurity, yet they will give you room to find a fortune worthy of your most tender compassion, if you can conceive any idea of my troubles.

I shall not needlessly enlarge on all the circumstances of our contests in the courts of justice; the first effect of the credit of our protectors was to obtain a suspension of the proceedings, which had been strenuously commenced the first day. My lord Linch was happily recovered. George, whom Mr de Pesses had at length obtained the liberty of seeing in prison, thought we were obliged in honour to send him back the two memorandums with which he had intrusted us. He was so touched with this voluntary generosity, that he became one of our most ardent defenders; notwithstanding love had the greatest share in his zeal. Scarce had he recovered from the first heat of his resentment, than finding himself more passionately in love than ever, he sent to my sister most submissive apologies for the excess to which he had been transported, and an offer without limitation of his interest and services. However, he had not dared to wait on her as soon as his health was re-established; but taking occasion from the returning of the two memorandums to praise highly our proceedings, and to own himself obliged to serve us at all rates, he fancied that after this profession of his esteem and friendship, she might consent to receive a visit from him. His hope was often frustrated, until having chose to write to her, and to give her an account of what effectual service he had done for us, he at length obtained the liberty of conversing with her. Rose trembled for us, and expected every moment to see the head of George upon a scaffold. This thought, which stifled all others, made her offer violence to her heart, in  
promising

promising Linch, that if he succeeded in saving our lives and obtaining our liberty, her hand should be the recompence of so great a service. A motive so capable of animating a lover did not suffer him to hesitate long. He lavished away his wealth to gain the judges, and employed himself day and night to raise up to us protectors with all the zeal of love.

Nevertheless, our ill fortune rendered all those pains unprofitable. The solicitations of the two courts, and a journey made by the king himself to Versailles, could not shake the regards which the king of France thought he owed to his oaths. He was fortified by an inviolable law, which he had imposed on himself, and which no consideration had yet made him violate. The only mercy which he granted at such powerful intercessions was, to suffer our process to remain suspended, and that my brother should wear out his life in the Bastile. I should have had without doubt the same lot, if I had been arrested; but thinking myself so much the more safe by this kind of indulgence, as Plunket had not left any friends to solicit vengeance for his death, I made no difficulty of returning to Paris under a disguised name, and of visiting my unhappy brother in his prison.

I very often saw my sister; which after so many inquietudes and alarms made me forget one part of my troubles. Alas, this dear Rose! I never left her without being bathed with her tears. She reproached herself with being the cause of all our misfortunes, and that it was to punish herself, she said, that she had promised her hand to my lord Linch. I flattered her heart, by representing to her that her promise obliged her to nothing, since we did not obtain the value which she was made to depend upon; and if her acknowledgments could engage her to any thing, I spoke to her of de Pesses, who well merited to counterpoise his rival, by the ardour and disinterestedness of his services. She was sensible of what I said; for the heart of Rose is a compound of generosity and tenderness: But I saw plainly that love did not speak either in favour of de Pesses or Linch. I found a

sweetness also in making her often fall on the discourse of my own torments. I asked her, if she was yet jealous of an unfortunate and unprofitable tenderness, which filled my heart with bitterness, and which yet could not make madam de L—— more happy, in case her love was as faithful as mine. In despite of fortune, which separated me from my love, she thought we were worthy of envy, and that the pains caused by our fidelity and tenderness merited the name of the most charming happiness.

When I spoke of the acknowledgments we owed to Mr de Pesses, I intended only those which he merited by his pains, and a thousand toilsome steps he had taken, to which his friendship and love had engaged him. In the unavoidable necessity we were in, after the commencement of our misfortunes, he had supplied our expences liberally, and he continued to aid us with the same generosity. For the time that we had hopes of re-entering into the possession of our lands at Saisons, and of recovering our money, we had accepted of his favours without shame: But our friends having forgot to solicit the court for a restitution of our substance, which they could more easily have obtained than our liberty, we were under a necessity of making new applications for this favour, and the success of them was uncertain; inasmuch, that finding an additional burden to what we already owed, and being obliged every day to engage in new debts, this necessity had become one of our most insupportable evils. I wrote to you in strong terms an account in what danger George was, only with the design of communicating it to you, and I never received any answer. Your silence did not at all discourage me. I rather chose to ascribe it to any other cause than your indifference. I wrote to you again; and I laboured above all to persuade you to give attention to the interests of my sister, to which honour alone would have engaged you to have afforded some aid, when she had no other resource than you and her virtue. You never gave me an answer. All my letters have without doubt miscarried: What should

should become of them, since you have assured me that not one of them has come to your hands? Finally, in the extremity of indigence and grief, sinking under the misfortunes of my brother of which I see no end, prevailed on by the tears of Rose which daily increase, pressed down by the despair of others and my own, I have chose to make this voyage to Ireland, to awaken in a happy moment your goodness and affection by my presence. I was even obliged to have recourse to the liberality of de Pesses, for defraying the expences of such a long journey.

It is now eight days since, travelling post from London, I wrote to you again, to give you notice of my arrival. I have made the rest of my journey with the ardour of a strong impatience; the ship which brought me from Holyhead making sail to Cork, I have from that port made my way by land, under many wants and great fatigue. Yesterday evening the rain and darkness obliged me to stop in the beginning of the night; and Fincer, our ancient friend, coming into my memory, whose house was not above a hundred paces out of my way, I determined to take shelter there from the severity of the weather. I found no-body at home but his daughter. She received me with a certain timidity and some marks of confusion, which would have raised in me suspicions, if the coldness of her reception had not been out of hand repaired by her civilities: But having readily perceived that I was ignorant of the misfortune of her father, whereby I could not accuse him of having had any share in yours, she spared nothing to persuade me, that she received my visit with pleasure. My melancholy in appearance and an air inspiring compassion, which have given me a perpetual sense of my afflictions, increased this disposition of hers in such a manner, that she gave me to understand by a thousand testimonies, that we ought not to reckon her among our enemies. She recited to me the unlucky adventure of our father, the address with which he made his defence, and the happiness he had in making an escape. She did not disguise from

me the vexation it caused you, nor the dangers to which his accusations exposed me in Ireland. It was by her advice that I came in the fall of the evening to Coleraine.

Patrick, having finished his relation, asked me, if I did not believe him more unhappy than culpable, and if friendship was so extinguished in my heart, that it could not be revived by compassion. I embraced him, and pressed him to my heart with all my might. But my tears, which I had difficulty enough to keep in during his story, found a vent in spite of my resolutions: And not able to resist all the commotions that were raised in my soul, O Patrick! said I, O dear object of my inquietude and of my tenderness! What is become of your prudence and my counsels? What is become of the succours of heaven, which never before failed you? Alas! What have you done with yourself! George! Rose! unhappy family! See then the end to which your fond prudence and greedy ambition have brought you! O God! let them profit by this example, to make them sensible of the need they have of thee! I added a thousand things with the same bitterness of sentiments. Nevertheless, not being willing to augment his troubles by my reproaches, and desiring to postpone the deliberation upon so great events to a more settled situation of mind, I restrained myself with some violence, under pretence of his taking refreshment and repose, which he stood in great need of. We sat down to table, but all my efforts could not stop me from falling again perpetually upon the passages I had just come from hearing. I began without ceasing to ask questions, and to desire explanations of all the circumstances, when we heard some body knock hastily at my door. It was opened immediately, because my servants were under no suspicion. At the same moment eight men armed, headed by an officer, came into the room where we sat; and having no trouble to discover that Patrick was the person they were in quest of, they arrested him by warrant from the viceroy, in order to conduct him  
to



to the castle of Dublin. The officer was a well-bred man, and seeing my oppression and grief, told me with a great many apologies, that he had it not in his power to explain to me his orders, the cause of which he was ignorant of; but that after the affair of Fincer I had better reason to judge of it than any other person: That if my brother had any cause to reproach himself, he was very imprudent to trust the design of his journey to paper; that they had without doubt intercepted all the letters that were under my address; and that he was at least certain, that it was a letter from Patrick himself that had given notice of the exact time of his arrival.

---

B O O K III.

---

I HAD scarce so much power over my inquietude as to moderate it till morning. The anguish I conceived for George and Rose, from the relation of Patrick, had a share in those perturbations that were of more immediate concern; and not thinking there was much time to lose, nor indeed any great difficulty to overcome, I resolved to follow my brother to Dublin. I made an equal account of the favour of my friends and his innocence. Yet too much slackness in improving our interest might expose us to difficulties of which the duration was uncertain; nor did I let out of my sight the dangers of Paris, so as to forget that George and Rose had a right to a part of my cares.

The day began to appear, when preparing to be gone, I had notice given me, that a gentleman of the neighbourhood inquired for me at my gate in great haste, and that he prayed me to come to him, without being offended at an incivility, which he was certain I would excuse when he had informed me of the cause. I had heard of his name, but had so little acquaintance with him, that the time and formality of his visit might have caused me some fright even under other circumstances. Notwithstanding, one moment of reflection upon what importance it was not to neglect any thing for my brother's interest, made me come down to him without hesitation. I found a gentleman on horseback. He made me a bow, and requested me to command my servants to retire.

retire. Yes, says I, looking in his face, in which I thought I remarked some emotion. He pressed me to send them aside with the more eagerness, that we might get into my chamber without being perceived. I satisfied him without difficulty, and continued only to look at him with some tokens of surprise. In fine, seeing himself without any witnesses present, he alighted, and shewed me a valise well stuffed, which lay concealed till then under his cloak. Having no suspicion of my honour, he said to me, as he fastened the bridle of his horse to the wall, help me to carry this burden into your closet, where I will explain to you the secret of my visit. The darkness not being yet fully dispelled, to make him fear any thing from the observation of my neighbours, he was under no apprehensions but from my servants; and he asked me again, if I was sure they were out of the way. Amidst these alarms, that might have raised in me some precautions, I submitted to his desires, only from the fear of injuring a man of honour, in discovering my mistrust of him.

The weight of the valise much surpassed its bulk; nevertheless, we carried it without betraying ourselves by any noise. Dilnick (so the gentleman was called) pressed me to lodge it in a secret place; and proposing to me to be seated, he let his voice fall to entertain me with this discourse: your prudence, says he, and the zeal you have discovered for the honour of your family, are two sureties for your discretion, and for the trust which my employer hath confided in you. It is not my own life I come to put into your hands, but that which is committed to you ought yet to be more precious. You know Sarah ———, the only daughter of the unfortunate Fincer, my relation and friend. If he indiscretion, or rather the weakness of her father, has exposed the honour of yours by false imputations; and which, having raised in you a perplexity from whence you are not yet delivered, may well make you look upon her as an enemy of your family. But you will have other notions when I inform you, that it is by her com-

mands I, am come here, and that the riches I have brought you are a succour sent by her for your defence, and for the defence of Patrick. She came to understand this night, from a rumour which obtains in the neighbourhood, that your brother was yesterday evening arrested in your house, and was by an order of court conducted to Dublin. It is manifest this is the late persecution now renewed. The expences attending your defence, and the disorder of your affairs, give her room to judge that you are not in a state of great abundance; and she has put together not only all her ready money, but even her jewels and plate, to furnish you with the means of defending your innocence, and of speedily setting the liberty and life of Patrick in security. I would have interrupted Dilnick, and observed to him the admiration I conceived of this lady's generosity. He conjured me to give him leave to continue his story.

Sarah, continued he, is a young lady full of wit and charms. To her natural perfections she has united sentiments worthy of her birth. A sum of money and some jewels are not the most precious things she has to offer. I have penetrated into the secrets of her heart; and thinking myself very happy to be thought worthy of her confidence and friendship, I exhorted her to follow those inclinations which she may confess without shame. She has seen Patrick, and the warm encomiums she made to me of his merit, together with the fright she fell into this night at the first news of his misfortunes, have given me the opportunity of discovering a matter she would willingly have concealed from my knowledge. Chance conducted me to her house; I pressed her not to open herself by halves. The ties of blood added to those of a long intimacy gave a weight to my importunities. She confessed, that for the short time Patrick had passed at her house he had touched her heart with a lively passion; and she flattered herself to have made some impression on his; nevertheless,

less, not being able to form a judgment thereof but from ambiguous appearances, she did not think herself in the least authorized to give herself further up to her inclinations; but in what manner soever he was affected towards her, she should not find it an easy task to subdue a love so tender; and to satisfy her mind by some sensible proof, she would employ all she had in the world to procure his liberty. Far from opposing her resolution, continued Dilnick, I represented to her, that I knew few gentlemen upon whom she could cast her eyes with more decorum and honour; that your brother was indeed without a fortune, but that with his birth and natural endowments, there was no fortune so high to which he might not aspire; that for her part, her years, the slight and old age of her father, her riches, her title as an only heiress, all in a word conspiring to make her think of marriage, she could not in the least be condemned for following the inclination of her heart in disposing of her hand, and that among a thousand reasons for approving of her choice, she would have this one, that of working a reconciliation between two illustrious houses, whom the misfortunes of the times had divided. She received my answer with tears of joy. She has reposed on me the care of her happiness, and being continually perplexed with her present fears, she has not taken one moment's rest all night; but has been distracted with the thoughts how to make herself most useful in procuring Patrick his liberty. I have had the pleasure of taking the charge, added Dilnick, of bringing to you what she judged most proper to help you under the first trouble, and I have not concealed from her, that in order to shorten the difficulties, which your delicacy might raise, my first step should be plainly to intrust you with that confidence and power which she has given me to serve her.

Every part of this discourse seemed to me to require more reflection than I was then capable of making, under the necessity I stood of discovering my thoughts of it out of hand by my answer. The

sentiments of Sarah for Patrick could not but inspire me with as much esteem as gratitude for her; but I called to mind the story my brother told me some hours before, and how could I imagine that a heart, filled with his Julia, could have power to engage in this new amour, which I should blame him for concealing from me? However, without such a supposition, I could neither give a just answer to the favourable overtures I had received, nor with honour accept of the assistance, which Sarah could by no means intend for the lover of another lady. In rendering justice to her generosity, I should have included that which ought to have been attributed to her love. The one was evidently the motive of the other, and probity would not permit me to let her remain in her error. Under this uncertainty I took the only course that could deliver me from it. My chaise was ready for my journey to Dublin. Without opening my intentions to Dilnick, I intreated him to suffer me immediately to wait on him to his kinswoman, making no other pretence for my visit than my great gratitude; of which I ought not to delay in making acknowledgements. My hopes were, that in acquitting myself of so just a debt I might dexterously procure some light into the dispositions of Patrick, and that according to his conduct with his mistress I should altogether regulate the opinion I was endeavouring to form of his designs, and the marks of approbation which I could not refuse giving.

The distance was but short. We found Sarah, who appeared to wait the return of her confidant with great impatience. The ardour, which she could not moderate in seeing him, was all at once cooled by her surprise in discovering that I followed him. I had prayed Dilnick to go a little before, to prepossess her with my arrival. He gave her an account in few words of all the circumstances of his journey; at least her blushes gave me room to judge, as I was saluting her, that she thought I was informed of every thing that passed in her heart.

This

This thought made me use the most plain and simple expressions, in order to spare her modesty. To my thanks and acknowledgements, she answered, that she should think herself very happy if Dilnick, who had proposed to her the giving her hand to my brother, had fully declared all the real esteem she had for him, and the honour which she imagined she should receive in making an alliance with my family : That her father, when he left Ireland, where his misfortunes left him little hopes ever to appear publicly again, had given her authority, by a writing under his hand, to seek an honourable opportunity of marriage ; that the inclination she felt for my brother was fixed by this new misfortune that befel him on his arrival ; for she must confess, to the shame of her father, that we had none to accuse but him ; that even this reason ought to serve to make Patrick more dear to her, and for him to estimate the offer which she made of her heart and fortune as a just reparation for the mischiefs he unjustly suffers ; that her father, whose intentions she did not fear to lay open, would infallibly approve of her designs from the same views : And desiring me to follow her into her closet, I will shew you, says she, by his last letter, that those sentiments cannot be suspected. She in reality produced a letter of recent date, in which, among a number of reproaches that he had laid on his conduct, he accused himself particularly of having violated his gratitude and attachment due to my father and our family. How much do I apprehend, says he, that my false depositions will become fatal to his children, and that their misfortunes will one day be a scandal and disgrace to my memory ! I interrupted his daughter : 'This piece, says I, is of the last importance for Patrick, and you cannot shew yourself better affected to him, than by producing it for his justification. She immediately apprehended in what sense a letter of this nature might conduce to his service ; and I saw her some moments held in suspense between her duty to the honour of her father and the interest

rest of her lover. But when I represented to her, that there was more glory in retracting an imposture, than shame in committing it, and that the public also made a just difference between voluntary faults, and those into which the necessity of certain situations might hurry men of the greatest honour, she without difficulty committed this retraction into my hands, of which I hoped the most favourable effect for my brother.

Proceedings thus noble and disinterested so augmented the esteem which I thought I already owed this generous daughter, that from that moment I wished from the bottom of my heart she might meet with all the returns of love and fidelity which she seemed to hope for from Patrick. I am in haste to make this confession, to draw the attention of my readers to the justice and force of the reasons which insensibly engaged me in the most fatal step that heaven ever permitted human prudence to be hurried. I conceived an affection for the beautiful Sarah, and I thought her worthy of it. Her fortune, which alone was a considerable advantage to my brother, did not prepossess me more in her favour than the excellency of her natural qualifications, and the testimonies I received of her virtue. What could happen more fortunate for Patrick than to fall all at once into an abundance of wealth, and the love of an amiable woman, whose prudence and charms might so agreeably fix the restlessness of his character? I did not scruple to interpret my thoughts in a manner suitable to these reflections. Nevertheless, my remembrance of Patrick's story left me a subject for some diffidence, and I could have wished to have the reasons cleared up that persuaded Sarah to think that he had an inclination for her. I took occasion to inquire into this particular, from a modest answer which she gave to what I said. My brother would be a monster, said I, if he were not sensible of the value of your heart. He is yet ignorant of your favours; but I doubt not but in the opportunity he had of conversing with you, he has given you demonstra-

tions.



tions that he is capable of distinguishing your merit, and of binding himself to you, as much by love as gratitude. She answered me with the same air of modesty, that without explaining his sentiments, he discovered some satisfaction in seeing her, and she thought she could put a good interpretation on matters in her favour. This answer not being sufficient to remove my fears, I expressed myself more plainly, that notwithstanding the havock in our fortune, which made the money she was so good to send me, very useful for the situation of Patrick, yet I did not think that honour would suffer me to make use of it without informing him first of his happiness. I am going to Dublin, says I; the rigour with which he is treated will not extend so far as to forbid me the liberty of seeing him. I flatter myself I shall bring back to you, in a few days, expressions of his gratitude, and a confirmation of whatever your goodness has made me conjecture. She conceived in the end what raised my scruples. Her complaints raised in me a new admiration. How! says she, independent of my love, of which I ought no longer to make mystery, do you carry so great a merit to the account of aiding an unhappy neighbour with some superfluous money? would you refuse me the same service if I were in the like situation? She firmly rejected all my excuses, and I could not obtain her leave for my departure, until I promised to return home, and take the charge of a part of what she had sent. To please her, Dilnick engaged to take a journey with me to Dublin, and to give her a speedy information of the success of our enterprise.

In addition to the thoughts I have laid open, I imagined that in whatever manner Patrick's affections were disposed to her, acknowledgment and gratitude would be the most fair motive to engage his consent to our proposals, and that I could not take a more promising course to bind a heart so sensible as his. This reflection diminished the repugnance I had to make use of the generosity of others.

others. Dilnick and I took up with us at first ten thousand franks, a considerable sum in Ireland. Patrick having nothing to upbraid himself with, and the severity of the government being quickened with nothing but suspicions, I did not apprehend they intended to carry matters against him to violent extremities. But I knew by experience the slackness of the proceedings of the court, and distracted as I was by other cares, I bore with me through all my journey such an extreme melancholy as amazed Dilnick. He ascribed it to nothing but the fear that alarmed me for my brother, and labouring to give some interruption to those idle fancies, to which I was continually given up, he related to me the manner in which he had contributed to the escape of Sarah's father.

The castle of Dublin, which is the prison for state-criminals, is an ancient building, fortified with many inaccessible towers, where prisoners are guarded with great vigilance. Fincer was shut up in one of the strongest of them, and his friends after a thousand trials despaired of opening a way for themselves to him. His ruin nevertheless appearing inevitable, they were under daily apprehensions, that when his life was brought to the last extremity, some alarms of conscience might make him reveal the names of his accomplices, and some of the best families of Ireland expected this catastrophe in fear and trembling, being apprehensive of being therein intangled in the person of some relation or friend. Dilnick, interested upon his own account, formed the plan of a contrivance which no other person could have executed so luckily. His usual residence being upon an estate remote from the capital, he had little apprehension of being known in Dublin. Nevertheless, he took precautions against this danger by disguising himself under the habit of a citizen. This garb besides was proper for his project. He knew from the pains his friends had taken to inform themselves of the most minute circumstances, that the keeper of this particular tower, which was made use of as Fincer's prison, was a married man, and the father of many children. Under divers pretexts he found

found the means of making an acquaintance with one of his daughters, and without sticking at beauty, he cast his eyes upon her whom he judged in haste for marriage. His proposal of taking her to wife followed close his first declaration of love. To make himself agreeable to the father, he talked of a considerable sum of money which he was seeking an opportunity to lay out ; and asking him if he knew any person of reputation with whom he might safely lodge it, he then proposed to him to take the care of it upon himself. After this step, his friendship and esteem seeming to increase by degrees, he associated him in the profits of his trade without other condition than charging himself with the care and conduct of it. The goaler thought himself very happy in the alteration which his credulous son-in-law was going to make in his circumstances. He engaged to give him his daughter, as soon as he should touch the promised sum, which Dilnick had effectually scraped together from the purses of a great many of his friends. During all this interval, he carefully avoided mentioning even the name of Fincer, or taking any notice that he was informed of his affairs, or under whose custody he was ; but when he put the money into the keeper's hands, Dilnick innocently and without the least shew of affectation mentioned, that there was due to him another sum of money, the loss of which he was apprehensive of, because he had neglected some formalities to give force to the obligation, and that his debtor being one of the conspirators whom the government had arrested, he had but a slender appearance of getting any thing of it from a man whom perhaps he should never see again. Greediness of gain raising a curiosity in the keeper, he naturally named Fincer. This shifting and going about the bush carried with it so little suspicion, that Dilnick immediately hit his mark. One could not even accuse the keeper of having violated his duty. He did a good turn without any intention of harm, for a man whom he already looked upon as his son-in-law. Dilnick having gained admittance into Fincer's prison, succeeded.

succeeded without difficulty in making him enter into the intention of his visit, and the meaning of his discourse. The business at first was only to slip a note into his hand, to advertise him of the design of favouring his escape. Fincer out of hand took the hint, and obtained the liberty of conversing with Dilnick many times, by acknowledging that he was sensible he owed him a considerable sum, but that the accounts he had furnished him with were obscurely made up, and consequently he demanded a new account. This simple and plain answer again deceived the avarice of the keeper. He consented to give them another opportunity to clear up and settle the matters in dispute. Dilnick took the advantage of several visits to furnish his friend with many instruments to facilitate his escape; which nevertheless another more fortunate stratagem spared him the trouble of employing. The trust reposed by the keeper in Dilnick encouraged him in the end to shew him an obligation fair written and formally drawn, by which he was assured of the payment of his money; and he shewed so much satisfaction at the ease with which he obtained his desires, that he readily engaged the keeper to join with him in some grateful requital. The testimony of acknowledgment agreed upon was, that they should, without acquainting him with it, carry a supper into the prisoner's chamber. The daughter contracted to Dilnick was the only person admitted to this feast, except her father. Fincer had the address to endear them to him more and more by proposing an immediate celebration of the marriage. It was in the midst of this jollity, which wine and gallantry inspired in the guests, that Dilnick slew the father with one stab of a poniard, whilst Fincer threatened to serve the daughter in the same manner, if she offered to make the least noise. Their design was to make the daughter aid their escape, in obliging her to appear with them at the gate, and Fincer having put on the cloaths of the keeper was in hopes to pass without any difficulty under favour of the darkness. But this unhappy daughter, terrified at the death of her

her

her father, and her own danger, fell into so deep a swoon, that despairing to bring her to herself, they pushed forward their flight. The danger of passing the gate was less than that of Fincer's delay, who nevertheless got out undiscovered in the habit of the keeper. Their friends were moreover planted near to favour their sally, and by means of many relays of horses placed on the road, they got to the sea-side before the dawning of the day.

It would be admirable says Dilnick, when he had concluded his relation, if we should find your brother in the same tower from whence I got out Fincer. You know then the way, says I laughing; but you have one thing to fear, that you may not find your father-in-law's family so favourably disposed. This discourse, which was no more than a banter, proved to be verified in earnest. The first news I had of Patrick's fate was, that he was in reality shut up in the same tower from whence Fincer made his escape. All the city was already informed of his adventure, and the memory of mine, which was very recent, helped to increase yet more the curiosity of the public. I recommended to Dilnick to pursue his zeal with discretion; and not having any thing to manage for myself, I went without fear to the viceroy's palace, where I had the satisfaction to see myself received with some marks of distinction. This lord had me called in, and anticipating what I had to say, he justified himself honourably, from the necessity which the nature of his employment laid him under, to do violence to his inclinations, in supporting the rights of the crown and the king's authority: If your brother be innocent, added he, I will make it my business to make him a reparation for the trouble I have caused him. I pressed his excellency to hear what I had to offer in his defence. But he refused me this favour, under pretence that the judgment of an affair of such importance did not depend solely on his authority. The permission to see him, with which I was obliged to be content, was sold to me rather than granted me; for I did not obtain it but on condition

dition, that a guard or a messenger of state should be present, to be a witness of our discourse.

Nevertheless, this was a favour of great value, and which I did not fail immediately to turn to account; yet under the fear that it was granted me only for one time, I returned to the place where I had left Dilnick, and consulted him about the advice which it was proper to give my brother. He recommended to me to carry him a thousand crowns, which might serve him for more than one use; and explaining his views particularly, he assured me, that if upon his first examination nothing so considerable should be found in his charge, as to give them room to proceed against him for high-treason, there was not a single inhabitant of Dublin, whom the hope of a much lighter reward would not engage to undertake any thing for his liberty. This, added he, I have seen verified in Fincer's affair. The scarcity of money makes it so precious to the Irish, that they would engage in any thing to obtain it; but the terrible executions, by which the government would cement the royal authority, have spread such a terror over Dublin, that they all turned pale at the sole mention of high-treason. He obliged me to put this remark in writing, and to lodge the paper in the purse with the thousand crowns. I cannot flatter myself, says I, that my Argus will afford me the liberty of putting the purse into my brother's hands, without examining what it contains. Begin then by gaining him over, replied Dilnick; an hundred pistoles will make you the master of all those venal souls. I easily saw, that this enterprize was possible; but I stuck at two scruples; one arose from my principles of religion, which would not suffer me to seduce a man by a bribe to the violation of his duty; the other was the delicacy of my honour, which made me consider it as an unworthy action to employ Sarah's money in my brother's service, without being satisfied of his intentions to marry her. However, an hundred pistoles not being so considerable a sum, but that I could make restitution of it out of my own income, I should have got

over

over this obstacle, if the other had not acted on me with all its force. I informed Dilnick of my difficulties, and he treated them as a weak chimera; but not having power to change my sentiments, he suffered me to leave him without giving much opposition to them.

I went to the castle, conducted by a state messenger, whom the viceroy had named to me. Patrick was greatly affected at my diligence, and at the first expressions of my friendship. Alas! says he, it is not my life nor liberty that cause my fears; but what will become of my sister? Who will solicit for my brother? You do not represent to yourself, added he, all the horror of their situation, since it is to me you think yourself indebted in your first cares. Go, be-gone for Paris, where your presence is more necessary than in Dublin; and under whatever pretext they detain me here, commit the defence of my innocence to heaven. I commended his natural affection; but answered I, how can you think that the most pressing object of my cares is not what gives me the most piercing alarms? Shall I leave you to perish without help for the sake of carrying my aid at a distance, which perhaps would be useless to your brother and Rose, of whom you have not represented to me the danger as an extremity so very urgent? Patrick interrupted me; I believe, says he, George is safe from some of his fears; but my misfortunes oblige me to open my heart upon the other subject of our distress, which my sole desire of sparing you made me in some measure disguise in my recital: Rose is virtuous, you need not doubt it; she has supported our misfortunes with courage, and appears insensible to her own: But she is on the brink of falling into the most extreme indigence. The amorous diligence of the duke of — does not abate one moment. A stranger, young, credulous——Pardon me if I lay before you my mis-givings of all that threatens her. The most established virtue has need of assistance; and who can assure you that one instant neglected may not sometimes draw on irreparable consequences? He would have con-  
tinued

tinued, but his discourse had already made on me too strong impressions. Even the air of obscurity, that he appeared to affect, helped to augment my trouble. I interrupted him in my turn, but with sentiments so piercing and bitter, that I was not at all surpris'd at the effects they produced. O Heaven! cried I, grant your relief, and do not abandon an unfortunate girl! Alas! Patrick, why do you rend in pieces my heart? I bear you all three in it, but how cruelly are you separated! Dreadful separation! Where can I turn myself? Where can I run? Where can I apply my first relief? Ought I to have quitted Paris? But why? Did you not reject my counsels? A thousand complaints of this nature, which I let fall in my transport, touched the heart of the messenger so sensibly, that he mingled some marks of obliging compassion with our discourse. The fervency with which we at first expressed ourselves on seeing one another again, made us give little attention to our being observed. The natural and free expressions of our griefs had mollified the fierce nature of the messenger. I was touched with his concern, in spite of the anguish that shook me, and I thought that acknowledgments were a just reason for making him a recompence. I offered him a part of the sum which Dilnick thought enough to corrupt him. The favourable dispositions into which I found the means of putting him, were no more than what he entered into naturally, and I had nothing to propose that did not suit with his duty. He greedily received my offers; his zeal increased, and seeing nothing in us but innocence, he said, that from all he had observed, he saw no room to hinder us from treating of our domestic affairs in private.

I could then open myself at liberty, and I said to Patrick, alas! how unseasonable is the time! how can I leave you in the danger you are, to fly to the aid of Rose? And ought I to abandon our unhappy sister on the brink of the precipice you have laid before me? I think, continued I, stopping the impatience he shewed to make me an answer, I

think,



think, my dear Patrick, that with a little presence of mind and firmness of resolution, you may easily resist our prosecutors, and make your innocence triumph. I am happily got out of this embarrassment. But your easy nature strikes me with terror. I fear from your way of thinking upon the events of life, and from this melancholy indifference, which your late adventures have redoubled in you, that you will make but a bad defence for yourself; you will abandon yourself to injustice, in thinking yourself sufficiently revenged by disdain. You are more capable than any man to employ yourself in the defence of another, ~~and yet will do nothing for your own.~~ Shall I then leave you here under such a cruel doubt, and not rather expose my life for the defence of that of a brother, who is to me so dear? Ah! proceeded I, embracing him, that you were in a condition to relish an advice, which would repair all our misfortunes! You might then place the repose and honour of Rose in security; you might facilitate the liberty of George; you might keep me about you to advance your own; you might re-establish our house in its ancient lustre; in fine, you might become the support and glory of an unhappy family, which is now on the brink of ruin, and which cannot be raised but by you. I am not naming to you any chimerical advantages; all the blessings I have mentioned are in your own hands; I offer them to you, and I conjure you to accept of them.

I looked stedfastly in his face, and laboured to throw into my eyes all the air of confidence and satisfaction, that I could not have but after an assurance of obtaining my desires. On his part he remained unquiet and agitated, as if he had a foresight of what my proposals were going to drive at. But, do you doubt, answered he, that I will not embrace with ardour whatever may conduct us to such great blessings, especially if it be by ways worthy of us? No, I do not doubt it in the least, replied I, if you have any love for your family. if the interest of Rose touches you, if you are sensible of the merit, of  
the

the generosity, of the wishes that a lady has to please you, and to purchase your heart by a thousand favours. In short, without giving him time to recollect himself, I continued to inform him, that Sarah Fincer, whose beauty and wealth he was no stranger to, consented to make him master of her fortune and person; that Dilnick, her nearest relation, had made the proposal to me; that she had confirmed it with her own mouth; and that consulting nothing but her inclination and esteem, she had already done for him all that a husband could expect from a tender and virtuous wife. She has stripped herself naked, says I, of all that she had most precious; she has sacrificed her money, her diamonds, her jewels and even her plate; that is as much as to say, she would sacrifice herself for you. I never knew any thing so modest and discreet as her nature, nor so tender as her sentiments. See if this be paying too dear for all the conveniences we want; which we may procure in a moment by giving your consent to what I have proposed to you. You ought to perceive that being charged with Sarah's generosity, I can preserve Rose by quitting you, and put into her hands sufficient to enable her to remove herself from the aids of others. It is you yourself must do her this important service, in sending her part of that wealth, which I would not have accepted of but for you. Free us from this inquietude; I will remain in Dublin to assist you with my counsels and cares. I will place you in a few days within the arms of an amiable woman, and one passionately in love with you. You will become the head, the protector, the father of your family; you will all at one stroke perfect our happiness and your own; one word, one sign to signify your consent will make us all happy.

The heart of Patrick was as it were locked up in proportion to my efforts for opening it. He appeared dismayed at what I said, and his consternation spread itself over his countenance. Alas! answered he, casting down his eyes, what is it you propose to me? Have you forgot what I told you about  
three

three days ago? It is to put our fortune and our happiness under possible conditions, which must subject us to perjury and perfidy? Think you, that I am not more bound to Julia by inclination than by oaths; that she has received my faith; that she has given me her's; that I am less my own than her's; and that I have any power over a heart in which she reigns with so just a right? What stops you, added he, sighing? Begone to Paris; go assist Rose. The succours for preserving her do not surpass your power; and I do not desire any further assistance in Dublin than what my innocence gives me.

It was manifest to me, that Sarah had flattered herself preposterously. This explanation was enough to stop the use I might have made of her liberality. I did not speak a word to Patrick of the thousand crowns I had ready to offer him, and I set myself to deliberate alone on the course remaining for me to take. Nevertheless, having a difficulty to conceive that a passion, which I looked upon as an irregularity and licentiousness of an idle youth, could hold out a long time in a mind so tender as Patrick's against all the reasons which I had given him, I exhorted him, without giving a further answer to what I had advanced, to meditate well upon an affair of such importance. I have obtained the permission of seeing you, said I, raising my voice so as to be heard by the messenger, this is in effect to declare, that it is not thought fit to treat you with rigour. The consideration for which you are in custody is not importunate, since this honest man does not take from us the liberty of conversing together. I will return to you again to-day.

I affected also not to open myself on the troubles of Rose, that I might leave him in possession of all his restlessness, which appeared to me to be a powerful persuasive to a heart such as his. My design was not less in going from the castle to take just measures for procuring a moderate sum for my sister. This was the hope I had of seeing Sarah's  
desires

desires succeed, which had engaged me more than necessity to receive her money ; for I had enough of my own remaining to make head against my embarrassments, at least on one side of them, and I did not at all despair of finding other aids from the generosity of some friends, with whom I had always lived in greater friendship than with the Fincers. I then quitted Patrick, without leaving him any other subject for reflection than the advantages I had proposed, and his alarms for his sister. But a cruel incident, against which all the integrity of my views could not before hand fortify me, at one stroke augmented my grief, and was near destroying all my hopes.

Dilnick, whom I left alone, did not think that the adventure he had related to me was a reason for concealing himself in such a town as Dublin. Change of dress, and the care he had taken to choose a lodging far from the castle, appeared to him to be two sufficient securities. Without other precautions, he employed the time of my absence in visiting his friends, who lived in several quarters of the town. The daughter of the keeper whom he had poniarded, this same mistress, whom he pretended to marry, discovered him in his passing through a by-street ; and, joining to the vengeance of her father a resentment for her own shame, she resolved at any expence to deliver him up to justice. Dilnick was in a coach ; she determined to follow him on foot for a good part of the day, until being fully satisfied of the place of his lodgings, she thought to have him arrested at a sure blow. I arrived from the castle, to consult with him upon the shortest way of getting a bill of exchange on Paris. I had scarce began to tell him my mind, before a noise, occasioned by the resistance of our servants, made us fear some insult. I put Dilnick in mind, that he had nothing to fear but for himself, and I advised him to secure himself by flight, without making an account how he might be prepared for an useless defence. He followed my advice so luckily, that escaping through a window that looked into the garden, he had time to remove himself from that quarter,

quarter, before they were in readiness to pursue him.

In the mean time the noise increasing by the cries of the guard, who threatened to force the doors, I presented myself before them, to know the cause. I understood from my servants, that at the sight alone of many people armed, they had chose to break down a strong door that was separated from our apartment. This precaution saved Dilnick, who had time enough to take refuge with one of his friends. As to me, have nothing to fear, I gave orders to my people to open the doors; and appearing before the guard, I complained of the trouble they had given me. The officer made me no other answer, but that he had a warrant from the viceroy to arrest an enemy of the government, and to seize every thing that he found in the same chamber. This commission, which was delivered in no other terms, was executed on the spot. Although the officer, who had made inquiries in the house, was surpris'd to find me alone, yet he was satisfied to make an exact search through all the closets, and neither hearkening to my justifications nor complaints, he lodged me in the cattle prison, whilst my trunks as well as those of Dilnick were carried to the viceroy's.

We had luckily nothing in our custody but Fincer's letter, which I had got from his daughter. This reflection supported a little my spirits; and reasonably imagining that the name of Dilnick had not even been mentioned in the former adventure, I flattered myself that since the accusation of his enemy could not be verified by his presence, it would fall to the ground of itself, together with all pursuits for justice. I foresaw also that it would cost my sincerity something in answering roundly upon my examination; but I was in hopes of eluding all questions, by protesting that I never had any acquaintance with Dilnick, and by proving the same by the testimony of divers men of honour, with whom I lived in familiarity; that I did not know him above two days. This manner of defending myself might

also serve to render his enemy suspected of impoture, and of having given too light a credit to her ill-will; seeing that not having any proofs to give of her accusation, it would be natural, in an affair that reflected on the honour of a man of rank, to have the matter related rather from appearances favourable to him, than from the depositions of a daughter without reputation and without notice. The remembrance of Rose was then the only weight under which my imagination could not be comforted. The instances of Patrick, and his equivocal expressions, returned into my mind, and having too great a bias to magnify the dangers by my fears, I made bitter lamentations to heaven all night of the obstacles which hindered me from giving that succour to virtue which I had intended.

It happened nevertheless, as I had foreseen, that this affair took a happy turn. The viceroy was surpris'd to find that it was I who was arrested. He found so little resemblance of truth in the information given, that without making any further inquiry, he reproached them with having made an inconsiderate step, which he thought himself obliged to make amends for by many apologies. Fincer's letter helped to confirm him in this disposition, and to inspire him with favourable thoughts of Patrick. The day following, he ordered the door of my prison to be set open, with a civil compliment for the error into which he had been precipitately thrown. The first use I made of my liberty was to go and return him thanks. He renewed his excuses, and speaking to me of Fincer's letter, he testified the satisfaction he had to find therein an insight into something that might be improved to the advantage of my family, and the justification of my brother. In fine, whether it happened that he had not fully comprehended the first account given by those who arrested me, and that the shame alone of having troubled me out of season, made him reject all other explanations, or whether he was at the bottom pleas'd to have found a pretext not to revive an affair which had been

been buried, he did not ask me the least question of what related to Dilnick. It was then published abroad as certain news in Dublin, that I had been unjustly arrested upon a ridiculous accusation, and Dilnick was so lucky as not to have his name so much as mentioned in the whole proceedings.

Who would not have imagined that my troubles were near an end, or at least that I was freed from the principal embarrassments that caused them? I was of the same opinion myself; and, pressed by the remembrance of Rose, I did not lose a moment in going to my lodgings, whither the viceroy assured me my trunks had been sent back by his orders. They were there indeed; but my money was vanished. I had a difficulty to believe my eyes or my memorandums. I was nevertheless convinced, that not only the main part of my wealth, but even the thousand crowns that I had carried the day before to the castle, ought to be in a leathern bag, wherein I had put it on my return. I was no less certain that I had locked up the bag in my trunk, and that it was carried out of my sight by the viceroy's guards. Without question it was in the same hands that carried it away from my lodgings, and it was manifest I could accuse no-body but them, and that they ought to be responsible to me for it. I had some hopes however that my complaints would be heard, and that the justice of the viceroy would order the restitution of what I was robbed of without his directions. I returned immediately to the palace, less moved by a resentment for my loss, than for a thousand frightful ideas that already tormented me on account of what was to come. The viceroy, being acquainted with the roguery of his guards, in a fierce tone the same moment ordered those who had the charge of my trunks to be taken into custody. But his pains were useless. Present death would not have made these miserable wretches, who valued money more than life, let go their booty. They were exceeding faithful to each other in the execution of the villany. One could not draw out the least confession

to expose them to any judicial proceeding. They resolutely protested that the trunks had not been opened till they were delivered at the palace, and that the viceroy having looked into them with his own eyes, it was from him an account ought to be demanded of what was lost.

This insolence, which alone would have deserved punishment in another nation, and which could not be conceived but by such as were acquainted with the character of the populace in Ireland, had not then less success, than the misfortunes which threatened me. The viceroy told me with some little peevishness, that he was vexed at my loss, but that I ought not to accuse any-body but myself; and that to be in a condition to require reparation according to the utmost rigour of the laws, it was necessary, that the moment I had been arrested by his guards I should have declared, that I had such a sum in my trunk, of which I accused them to have robbed me. He gave me even to understand, that not being able to convict them by any proof, I might fear that they would vex me in their turn, for demanding a reparation for a complaint which they might treat as a calumny.

This was as much as to declare to me, that it was time to put an end to my pursuits; for the testimony of Dilnick, which would have served as a proof of the truth, was not any help to which I could think of having resource. I had power enough over my heart at least to suffer me so to improve my misfortunes, as to be a new reason of indulgence, which should oblige a lord as generous as the viceroy not to suffer Patrick to languish under too tedious an expectation of his lot. He appeared to have a just sense of this motive, and I went away satisfied with his promises. But it proved a feeble consolation when being retired within myself I endured the reunited assaults of a thousand passions, which I had not before felt, and which joined themselves to those of which I had already experienced the full force. My inquietude for Rose and Patrick was by no means  
the



the principal torment that assaulted my heart. My thoughts were employed on the generous Sarah, whose advances were so unhappily frustrated, and who with her affectionate hopes lost a sum of money which she might have thought better employed. I thought of myself, who was loaded with two sorts of debts, neither of which I could see any appearance of satisfying; that of honour, which obliged me to the restitution of a loan, which all my parsimony would not for a long time equal the value; and that of gratitude, which Patrick's refusal would never suffer me to discharge. What opinion would Sarah have of my adventure? How would she be persuaded that her money had slipped through me hands, and that she had no more profit to hope from her tenderness and generosity? But supposing that by a long denying of myself necessities I might at last discharge the first of those two debts, what would become of Rose, to whom I should bereave myself of the power to afford the least help? There remained only for her the assistance of heaven; but how has she deserved it, says I, by her inclinations after the vain occupations of the world, and her resistance to my advice! And from whatever cause her fall proceeds, is it then less terrible to me, whether I listen to honour, or consult nothing but religion?

I passed one part of the day agitated by these reflections, and nothing appeared proper for calming my mind, when I received a billet by the hands of an unknown person, who had not a word to say in explanation of his commission. I was troubled to receive it; but in whatever obscurity it was couched, I had not read two lines of it before I discovered that it came from Dilnick, who by experience thought himself under a necessity of making use of the greatest precautions. He observed to me, that being concealed in the house of a faithful friend, he had been acquainted with all the train of our adventures; that he was informed in the last place of the loss of my money; but looking upon this as the least of our misfortunes, he exhorted me to arm myself, with for-

titude, and to depend upon new assistances, which he had prepared himself to provide for me; that being bound so near by blood to Sarah, he had already conceived for Patrick all those sentiments which he thought due to the husband of so dear a relation; that he was without children, and not thinking his estate could be better employed, he was resolved to sell a part of it to supply my loss; that he thought this way more eligible than that of selling Sarah's plate or diamonds, and the rather as such a sale would be drawn out into length, and that he could in a moment finish his own to one of his friends, to whom he had already proposed it. The conclusion of the letter contained other testimonies of his zeal, and some advice which might forward Patrick's liberty. I observed, added he in a postscript, yesterday our disappointment to Sarah; but I have not thought it proper to-day to inform her of the robbery committed on you, and I request you to use the same discretion.

This was a new subject for gratitude; but such an one as could not but help to redouble the torments of my heart. I did not hesitate what answer I ought to give to this intimation; it contained a pressing intreaty not to undertake any thing without first receiving some explications, which I had promised to send him in our first interview; and commending his prudence in not committing the place of his retreat to a letter, I supplied him with a method by which he might let me see him without the least danger of a discovery. During the ardour of my inclinations, inspired by so much generosity, I intended to have gone immediately to Coleraine, and I employed all my credit for raising a sum of money, though it was by mortgaging the last of my personal estate, and all the income of my benefice: But as I could never reckon to make my borrowings amount to ten thousand franks, so I could not forget of what importance it was to Patrick that I should be in Dublin when he was brought to his first examination. The quickness or delay of proceedings  
seemed

seemed to me to depend on this scene, and it would have rended my heart to be separated from him without knowing what he had to fear or hope.

I did not let a day pass over without returning to his prison, as much to deliver him from the inquietude he might suffer the day before in not seeing me according to my promise, as to draw from him positive explications of the situation of Rose. I had some hopes also from my last persuasions, and from so many pressing motives, which I had left to time to ripen. In regard to his sister, he repeated to me, that her principal fear consisted in the addresses and intrigues of the duke of ———, who had in a manner proposed to her the ruin of her chastity and honour: But I yet knew that he dissimulated one part of his sentiments, and I was the more afraid of a danger which he was obstinate in disguising from me. I received no more satisfaction from the second of my desires. He sorrowfully renewed to me what he had before said, with the same request to abandon him to his unhappy lot. It was not yet time to discover to him all circumstances that he was ignorant of; but I added to those reasons which I knew were capable of touching his heart, divers considerations taken even from the acknowledgments he had made me. Consider, says I, that your Julia is ravished from you without hopes of her coming back; that you are ignorant even of the place of her abode; that she is in the custody of her father, who hates you, who has destined her for another spouse, who has already compelled her, perhaps, to receive him; in fine, that you have nothing to promise yourself from her tenderness, nor from your ———. He interrupted me in shedding some tears: You count my troubles, says he, but this is not a remedy proper to cure them.

I should have despaired of vanquishing him, if the trust I had in the power of heaven had not made me reflect continually, that the hearts of men are in God's hands, and that he may change them at his pleasure. Our misfortunes seemed to me to be

worthy of his pity ; and seeing nothing but the marriage of Patrick that could repair them, I waited for it as a favour from his goodness, in which nevertheless I was prepared to see it fail with such resignation as men have under misfortunes of which they do not see the cause, and which religion alone teaches them to bear without murmuring. What course should I take under this cruel supposition ? I would throw myself at Sarah's knees, at the risque perhaps of dying there for grief ; I would confess unto her the unfortunate issue of her love and generosity ; I would submit to her disposal my life, which was not the object most dear to me, and the small share of worldly substance I enjoy ; and if the goodness of her heart should leave me both, I would fly to Paris, and there offer a-new the sacrifice of them to Rose, without any other condition than that of her loving virtue, and sometimes following my advice. I took special care not to communicate these notions to Dilnick, whom I saw next day. He had satisfied my request, by informing me only simply of the name and habitation of his friend. I conceived the meaning of this address, and not neglecting any precaution, I made many turnings and windings about the streets before I appeared at the place which he had named to me. He received me with a joy which gave me room to expect some favourable news. In reality, getting the start of me immediately, I am not much delayed, says he, by the difficulties you threw in my way ; for, fearing to fail of an opportunity which might not offer every day, I have sold to my landlord a part of my estate, although he knew it, added he laughing, I have gained something by this march, for I have drawn from him fifteen thousand franks for what was never yet valued at more than thirteen or fourteen thousand. As I exclaimed upon this step, and treated it as unprofitable and inconsiderate. You do not know, says he, in what a happy point (which we yet durst not even hope for after so many traverses) our affairs are about to terminate ; and do  
not.

not reproach me with having been too quick, for it is to this diligence that I owe all our good fortune, which can now no longer fail us. He continued to apprise me, that thinking himself in a condition to attempt something with his money, he had gone that morning to the president of the committee established by the court for the settlement of the late troubles, and before whom Patrick's affair was to be tried; that not being known to him he passed without fear for a gentleman of our family; that in the first opening of the discourse he plainly understood, that no certain fact was alledged against Patrick, and that he was questioned only upon bare suspicion; but apprehending that it would at least take up a good deal of time to clear the matter, he judged that we had nothing to fear but delays in bringing it to a hearing, and the duresse of a prison, of which perhaps we could not yet see an end; that it would be hazardous to sound the president above-board, and therefore without desiring any favour for the criminal, he had requested on the contrary that the strictest severity might be used in the inquiry and judgment, provided they were made with expedition; that he added only, that being persuaded that this favour depended on him, if it could be thought no injury to his duty, he would without difficulty propose to him some motives which might be agreeable to his conscience, and possibly beneficial to his affairs; in fine, that he had talked to him of a thousand pistoles, which should be ready laid down that moment; that upon this proposal the match was concluded, under one condition only, that if nothing appeared against Patrick, he should be set at liberty before the end of the month. This promise was performed on the spot by Dilnick's paying ten thousand livres which he had in gold; and as he appeared to be a man of discretion in the way he took to bind the bargain, the president undertook the execution of it. I am going, says Dilnick, to tell this happy news to Sarah, and on your side you may communicate it to Patrick.

This relation was not so long as to give me time to come out of my surprize, or to put my answer in better order than my thoughts. I perceived my heart to beat with fear and confusion. But why are you in such haste? says I, without being determined on what I should say; Why do you not attend to what I am come to talk to you about? Have you sold your estate, continued I, with the same embarrassment, to serve strangers, nay, without consulting them, without knowing whether they are in a condition to satisfy advances and generosities of this nature? If this, replied Dilnick, be the only difficulty you labour under, you may be pacified, and have no more disturbance for an acknowledgment, which I shall not impose on you as an obligation for the benefit. Sarah must inherit my estate, What signifies it whether she enters into possession to-day or after my death? seeing I shall have enough remaining to live on with comfort. I know, added he, that I shall please her by this tender mark of my affection, and that she will prefer the service I went to do her to my whole inheritance.

Touched yet more with these sentiments than with their effects, I made no reply, but by acknowledging that I put a just value on them; and taking my leave of Dilnick under some pretence, I went immediately to the castle with as much alacrity as I was capable of. But my impatience suffered greatly by the compass I was obliged to take, in order to have the attendance of the state messenger. Every moment of delay appeared to me to be a loss to the honour of Patrick, to my own, to the tenderness of my heart, in fine, to all that I held most dear and sacred.

It is no longer time, says I to Patrick at my first entrance, to stand upon terms, nor to listen to a vain love, when you ought to hearken to the voice of honour. And relating to him all the rights which the Fincers family had acquired over him, see, says I with vehemence, to what you oppose your pretexts and excuses. If one had offered you, with a heart so  
noble,

noble, a forbidding face, or any other deformity of body or mind, I might perhaps lament the necessity, to which however you would not be less obliged to submit. But birth, beauty, riches, united to all the good qualities of mind and heart, are not indeed an offer that merits your disdain. In a word, you are bound, you have no more the liberty of choice left you. Accuse if you will the caprice of your fortune, which in spite of you makes you a slave to the goodness of another, and bewail your excess of happiness, to which my pains have not contributed more than yours; but even this complaint ought to be buried in the bottom of your heart, and you cannot be deficient in love and gratitude for Sarah, without overwhelming yourself with eternal ignominy. I set no more value, added I, on the considerations which were heretofore taken on our proper interests; it is your business to see whether they have lost their force, and in what point the misfortunes of Rose may move you.

He listened to me with his eyes cast down, and with more agitation than if he had been hearing the sentence of his judges: You sink me down, says he with impatience; and you are in concert with those who seek my ruin. I know Sarah Fincer. I confess all you have said of her charms. But if I ought to esteem her merit, and shew my gratitude for her great benefits, I am not obliged by any right to surrender myself up to her views, and to make myself the victim of an inclination with which I never had a design of inspiring her. If she demands nothing but my life, I will not dispute it with her. You require for her a heart, which is no longer mine; and when the most invincible reasons shall compel me to accept the offer of her hand, I perceive that all her charms will never obtain of me that which I am no longer master of to grant. I answered him, that honour and habit would make up for the vivacity of inclination; and that esteem being the most solid foundation of marriage, he would find in it a perpetual source in the merit which he himself attributed

buted to his spouse. As to the answers by which he thought to satisfy my importunity, I reproached him with ingratitude; and entering into a detail of all the circumstances of the conduct and generosity of Sarah, I reduced him to the pass of acknowledging with a sigh, that she merited the adorations of a free heart: Alas! cried he out, that it is not possible for me to love! I thought him staggered. However, being willing to spare as well his health as his repose, which had suffered much in so sharp a conflict, I put off any further proceedings to the sequel of some other discourses.

My reasons could not but receive strength from day to day by new events. Dilnick, attentive to his undertaking, gave so little intermission to the president, that the day after he obliged him to assemble his committee, with the participation of the viceroy, to begin the examination. All Patrick's crime consisted in his being the son of a father, whom the false depositions of Fincer had made suspected; they had nothing to object to him but the same suspicions, founded upon the choice he had made of forsaking Ireland, and making his abode in France, from whence they supposed he might have come back, in order to carry on some designs against the state. He explained the motives of his departure, and the reasons of his return, with all the simplicity and plainness that goes along with innocence. The modesty and candour painted in his face fixed the committee in his interest. The president, being disposed in reality to serve him, made remarks on the justice and clearness of his answers, and having artfully brought about a discourse upon the zeal due to the state, he observed, that to fulfil so just a debt, it was not necessary to wound others, by lightly exposing the honour of an infinite number of persons distinguished by their merit and birth, and in building upon the weakest appearances to strike at their liberty. Fincer's letter, which was communicated to the assembly by the viceroy, came in very seasonably to confirm this favourable disposition. The hand,  
writing.



writing of this gentleman was well known. It could not reasonably appear that he was gained over by us to give a testimony of this nature ; and as he appeared capable of perjuring himself successively on both sides of the question, it was plain, that from Denmark, where he was known to have taken refuge, there could not go and come letters and answers in so short a space. There was no body, who seeing this examination take so fortunate a turn in the first deliberation, but what judged well of what was to come. Dilnick had some discourse with the president after the rising of the committee, and I obtained on my side an audience of the viceroy. The answers we received each of us agreed so well in our favour, that we had no doubt of the most speedy result to our desires.

Patrick was the only person who appeared insensible of the approach of his liberty. He began to look on his engagements with Sarah as a chain, which he should find a difficulty to break ; and this thought had so afflicted him, that he could not be more changed by some days sickness. Though the cause of this alteration could not escape me, yet I affected to ascribe it to the trouble his examination had given him ; and overcoming my own vexation arising from his pain, under the persuasion that I was labouring solidly for his happiness, I had the firmness to renew my persecutions, and to recover him to his duty with more vigour than ever. He could not dispense with visiting Dilnick upon his getting out of prison. I apprehended, that tho' he had not in the least overcome his repugnances, yet he could not have so much weakness as to make it visible that he thought himself led to execution, and that he would not give cause to our benefactors to be displeased at seeing him accept with so ill a grace a favour that seemed to merit all sorts of forwardness. I spared no pains to make him enter into the same views, and I continued the following days to urge him to it without any caution.

The unexpected arrival of Sarah Fincer enflamed more and more my zeal for their common happiness. She began her journey upon receiving Dilnick's first letter; and expecting to find us, him in his sanctuary, and me in a prison as close as my brother, she had scraped together in haste all she could borrow of her friends to come and labour herself in obtaining our liberty by her own pains and new supplies. It was not at all the load of her benefits that disconcerted me; it was easy to bear them, near a person who could esteem herself happy to see them accepted, and who confessed to me, that I had a number of advantages over her, since she should be indebted to my services for the love and affection of my brother. But what explanation could I give her even upon the ground of this hope? I was reduced to intrench myself within loose compliments, which would have made her unravel one part of my embarrassments, if her generosity and candour had not upheld her from such prejudices. Far from condemning Dilnick's conduct, she thanked him with tears in her eyes for the important services he had done for Patrick; she would have restored to him on the spot the price of his land; but with the same disinterested nobleness, he prayed her to put off such considerations to another time. I did not fail to make Patrick observe the value of this increase of goodness and obligations: He made no answer to my most ardent discourse, and his sighs not being a language plain enough for me, I left him, without knowing in what manner I ought to interpret his silence.

The same day I received from the viceroy the agreeable confirmation of the resolutions of the committee. It was assembled a-new; and all the judges being borne down by the authority of the president, and the suffrage of the viceroy, had in concert declared their opinions for restoring Patrick to his liberty. It had also been resolved by an unanimous voice, that for making amends in the eyes of the public for this sort of outrage he had unjustly suffered, they should depute to him a member of the committee,

committee, to beg his pardon for the conduct they had observed towards him out of zeal for the royal family, and for the tranquillity of the state. This application proceeded from the viceroy, who had measures to observe with the nobility. I immediately gave Sarah information of this news, which she received with transports of joy; and thinking herself not less sure of the heart than the liberty of her lover, she gave herself up without reserve to two hopes, which ought to have been fulfilled the day following. I should have been there with her, could I have been satisfied of the dispositions of Patrick. I left him irresolute in my last visit. The most favourable circumstances I could draw was from his silence. I was in hopes indeed, that by making on him a new effort at the very moment he saw the doors of his prison opened, I should bring him to a more lively sense than ever, at least of what he owed to gratitude; and that in the first transports of an affected heart he would second Sarah's errors by the vivacity of his acknowledgements. This thought raised in me another of a larger extent. I flattered myself, that in giving all the weight I could to this first ardour, I might possibly at the same instant have the opportunity of getting over his trifling difficulties; and that not daring to defend himself against reasons so powerfully supported, by the presence and tenderness of Sarah, he would consent without reflection to all that she should appear to desire. I did not let her into any confidence of my design; but prepossessing her in general terms with the eagerness I was in of acquitting myself speedily of all our debts by the heart and hand of my brother, I gave her to understand, that if she was absolutely determined to content herself with a return so much inferior to her favours, it would be vain to put off to the county of Antrim, what might as well be executed in Dublin. The ceremonies of the catholics are made without noise in Ireland, and the power with which I was invested gave me yet a greater right to shorten them. We shall avoid also, said I, the noise and expence of  
a well-

a wedding-feast, of which the principal value consists in the tender sentiments of our hearts. She applauded this proposal; and Dilnick having no less relish for it than she, they both made me master for regulating the ceremony and the time.

I retired in good time to meditate at leisure upon an enterprize, of which I gave thanks to heaven for having inspired me with the design. I found a letter at my lodgings sent me from Coleraine, where I had taken care to leave my address, and opening the first cover, I was astonished to find the second superscription in the hand-writing of Rose. With what impatience did I open it? I found my heart beat, and my hands tremble, as if I had a fore-sight of what I was going to read. This melancholy letter remains yet among my most precious papers. I cannot better please my readers than by giving it to them faithfully in her own words.

“ How long have the moments appeared to me,  
 “ my dear brother, and what strange alarms have  
 “ want and indigence caused me! Patrick is gone,  
 “ I have received none of his letters, and I am ignorant of the success of his voyage; but whatever  
 “ news I can possibly hear, it cannot be so melancholy as what I have to write to you. A few  
 “ days after his departure, the superior of the convent, where he had left me, surprised to see him  
 “ no longer appear, and without doubt disquieted  
 “ for some extraordinary expences in which my  
 “ wants had engaged me, came to me and declared  
 “ plainly, that her house not being at all in a condition to make advances for pensioners, she was  
 “ under the necessity of making good the value of  
 “ what she had laid out for me; and shewing herself  
 “ yet more alarmed for what was to come of my  
 “ pension, she asked me if I soon expected to see  
 “ my brother. My troubles not suffering me to  
 “ hear her without shedding some tears, far from  
 “ being moved, she repeated to me, that not being  
 “ rich enough to charge herself for nothing with my  
 “ entertainment, she desired me to think in good  
 “ time.

“ time of providing myself another retreat. I  
“ understood that she had been informed of the dis-  
“ orders in our fortune, and that she made but little  
“ account of my brother’s promises. Under the  
“ troubles I found myself, with little ready money,  
“ and obliged to lay down immediately the better  
“ part of what I had, I saw no resource more  
“ honest than to reduce myself to live upon the la-  
“ bour of my own hands, in making use of the  
“ little talents for which I am indebted to my edu-  
“ cation. I have paid all my debts, and followed  
“ by my chamber-maid, who would not abandon  
“ me, I have retired among honest but poor people,  
“ who have hired me a chamber at a very low price,  
“ I have been shut up these eight days past in an  
“ undiscoverable solitude. My landlord and land-  
“ lady take the trouble of selling my work, and  
“ demand no other payment from me for my lodg-  
“ ing and diet. I employ myself in embroidery, and  
“ my chamber-maid helps me in my work.

“ This sorrowful estate would not be without  
“ sweetness for an afflicted heart, if my misfortune  
“ had not discovered my retreat to some enemies of  
“ my repose. The duke of Lincoln has renewed to  
“ me his offers, with one too large not to carry in  
“ it some poison. He has assured me by my hosts,  
“ that his resolution is to marry me; and I cannot  
“ deliver myself from their persecutions, otherwise  
“ than by threatening to seek for another retreat.  
“ One day he conveyed into the basket, in which I  
“ put my work, a purse full of gold, and so weighty  
“ that it was difficult for me to throw it out of my  
“ door, ordering my landlady to return it to him,  
“ and to receive nothing from his hands. Ano-  
“ ther day, taking notice that our victuals were  
“ better than ordinary, and better dressed than is com-  
“ mon among such people as my hosts, I obliged  
“ them to confess, that they had them from some  
“ unknown cook, who refused to take their money;  
“ and not eating any dinner that day, I protested to  
“ them, that for the time to come I would rather  
“ die

“ die for hunger than taste of such poisoned dishes.  
“ De Pesses leaves me no more repose. It would be  
“ of no use to mention to you other persecutors,  
“ whom you do not know. My troubles augment  
“ without ceasing, and I have no person from whom  
“ I may hope for the least consolation.

“ It is not any assistance I ask of you, imagining  
“ that your affairs are in too bad a situation. But  
“ will not you give me your advice? A just regard  
“ for the honour of our name has stopped me a  
“ hundred times, when I was about taking up the  
“ pen to write to St Germain: Let me say I, use  
“ shifts to conceal myself, rather than take off the  
“ veil which yet covers our misfortunes. If I  
“ knew any solitude more retired than mine, a con-  
“ vent, in which they would not blush to afford a  
“ sanctuary to honour and virtue forsaken by the  
“ world, I would go and conceal myself from man-  
“ kind for ever, and spare you all at once those vex-  
“ ations, which the uncertainty of my lot cannot  
“ fail to give you. But where shall I address myself?  
“ Have you no friend who could privately do me  
“ such an important service? What imports it where  
“ I die of grief and heaviness, provided I attain to  
“ that pass as not to incommode and not to dishonour  
“ any person? Patrick without doubt has abandoned  
“ me; I have received no account of him. Under  
“ pretext of passing into Ireland, he is gone to seek  
“ for employment in some strange court. He has  
“ reason to disburthen himself from such a load as an  
“ unhappy sister. Alas! I have nevertheless bot-  
“ tomed a great deal on his tenderness. George is in  
“ chains; I know not whether he will ever be re-  
“ lieved from them; and not being able to be any  
“ way useful to him, I do not go near him to redou-  
“ ble his grief, by communicating to him my own.  
“ Nothing remains for me but my honour, my trust  
“ in heaven, and the helps which I draw from my  
“ own hands. Adieu! my dear brother: You can-  
“ not believe how my tears have altered me.”

She concluded by giving me the names of her hosts and her abode, where she prayed me to address my answer without delay.

I was luckily alone when I finished the reading of this fatal letter. It concerned my honour that nobody should be a witness of my transport. I threw myself on my knees in the middle of my chamber, and with a heart more oppressed than from the fear of a cruel torment, I remained a long time in this posture, without other motion than that of my arms, which I lifted up with all my power to heaven. My thoughts were as much constrained as my altitude. I had no clear representation of any thing, and in the confusion of so grievous sensations my eyes had already gushed out in an involuntary torrent of tears. In fine, casting up my eyes more freely to heaven, as they were naturally elevated in my first transport, I addressed to God all my complaints, which were, as I may say, heaped together in the bottom of my heart, during this forced silence. Oh! Father of the wretched, Oh! Protector of the weak, cried I a thousand times in a moment, do you abandon those who have not forgot you? Do you give over to ruin a trembling girl, who yet combats for *her* duty? Who will be the refuge of orphans and the poor, if you refuse them your succour? Then coming as it were to myself, after a number of other invocations, I represented to my imagination (with a thousand new torments) the situation of which my dear and unhappy sister drew such a moving picture; ——— reduced to labour in the house of a poor man; ——— to give her labour in exchange for her sustenance; ——— to hide herself with a view of flying from shame and to support her poverty with honesty; ——— to weep and to suffer! O Rose! O tender sister! what fate, and of what use in the world is merit and birth, if the daughter of the earl of ——— is forced to this horrible disgrace.

Nevertheless, in proportion as reason and religion prevailed over the motions of nature, I considered, that

that what I looked upon as the last excess of misfortune for a lady of the birth and merit of Rose, might be only a disposition of heaven, which was willing to put her virtue to the trial, and which might therefore perhaps be hereafter more liberal in recompensing it. I was ashamed to have considered, according to human views, that affliction is a disgrace, which ought to be received with submission, and which would infallibly help to make the honour and prudence of my sister shine out with greater lustre. For setting aside the expressions of her grief, which had not in them any thing of bitterness or passion, I thought I discovered in all her words a soul firm to her duty, and a declared relish for virtue. What have I to dread for her, says I? a little vexation and chagrin, some tears which the pride of nature drew from her, a little alteration in her manner of living which good fortune may soon repair. But she is moulded to patience, to humility, to sweetness, to a compassion for the misfortunes of others; and this heart, which adversity cannot damp, nor make her swerve from her duty, may form perhaps some day or other one of the first characters in the world. Yet let us take care, added I, that the trial does not endure too long; and health or rather life shall speedily fail me, if any thing be capable of retarding the assistance which I myself will carry to my dear Rose.

Another reflection, which contributed much to calm my mind, was a thought that came on me all at once, of making this incident help to fix the irresolutions of Patrick. I knew his love and tenderness for his sister. The picture of her misery and of her dangers, his present inability to comfort her by any other way than his marriage, in fine, a thousand terrors which absence might swell, and which my reasonings might yet make appear more urgent, made me believe my victory almost assured. I was blind also, says I, in not acknowledging a favour of heaven in that which at first view I considered as a new misfortune.

I passed



I passed the night in tranquillity under these hopes, and the appearance of day not having diminished them, I went to the castle about nine o'clock, with more joy than inquietude. The keeper gave me notice that Patrick was ~~not alone, and that he did not~~ doubt (from the rumours spread abroad) that the visit was to declare him at liberty. In reality I saw come out of his chamber a magistrate, whom I knew to be a member of the committee, and who leaving the keeper an order in writing, declared to him, that he might immediately set his prisoner free. Having perceived me, he made a civil compliment, testifying the satisfaction he had received in being pitched upon by his body to bring such good news to my brother; and he repeated to me the form of words which he had been ordered to use upon the occasion. They were congratulations upon his innocence, and a concern for their unseasonable suspicions of him. Yet nevertheless he left it to us to discharge the keeper's fees, which are immense in Ireland. In taking an account of them before I went in to Patrick, and adding to them what was yet to be paid to the messenger, I was a little vexed that I had not money about me to answer the charges. However, being determined not to have recourse to Sarah if I could avoid it, being overpowered by so many benefits, which her generosity and the disorder of our circumstances had forced me to accept, I proposed to the keeper, to give us some time upon my note, and he was obliging enough to promise me this favour.

Nothing remained now so urgent as the vanquishing Patrick's heart. You are at liberty, said I embracing him; your judges have treated you with so many marks of distinction, that you ought to pardon their rigour. I know no-body's lot more happy than your's, added I; and I doubt if a passage so quick from a calamitous to the most shining fortune has not something in it more poignant than an uninterrupted prosperity. Sarah Finner waits you, says I further; do you believe she is in Dublin, and that under an impatience

tience to see you, as well as to bring us new aids, she arrived yesterday, loaded with every thing most valuable she could gather together? He interrupted me: Do not search for, says he, unprofitable shifts; I penetrate your thoughts. It is manifest from all the relations you have made me, that nothing can equal the generosity of Sarah Fincer, and I find myself overwhelmed with her kindnesses. This then is another more signal favour, to be willing to divide with me her fortune and her riches. I am under confusion to find myself unworthy of them; but do not refuse to hear me out. A man is not master of his affections, continued he coldly; the more I consult mine, the more I find an impossibility to command them. Give what name you please to this weakness; but I call heaven to witness, that having promised an eternal love to Julia, nothing can ever make me renounce these sentiments. I shall then marry Sarah without loving her; I shall make her unhappy by my coldness; she will sooner or later perceive that I have a heart taken up by another love. I shall be capable of nothing but pitying without consoling her. See now if you think it convenient to press a marriage which neither heaven nor men can approve, which is yet, perhaps, proper to repair our estate, but it must be at the expence of Sarah herself, who will infallibly precipitate herself into a remediless misfortune.

This discourse appeared to me to have been studied; and not doubting but that his principal design was to cool me by the alarms of conscience, I extremely deceived his expectations, in answering him with the same coldness, that he was absolutely mistaken in his principles. I proved to him by a chain of reasoning that admitted of no reply, that what he called unconquerable love, inviolable constancy, necessary fidelity, were such chimeras, as religion and the order itself of nature did not acknowledge in a sense so wanton. For it would follow then, says I, that a man of the most vile condition, who perhaps may be

be as sensible as another to the merit of a distinguished woman, would be in the right to pursue his inclinations; and that having done so, he might lay down to himself, as you do, a law for his love and constancy. No, continued I, if these two qualities are among the necessary virtues, it must be after a just and lawful engagement; but reason and esteem are the guides that ought to precede. Love will never fail to follow so fair a cause; and the blessing of heaven, by giving purity to nature, will afford a pleasure and sweetness to those engagements which it has sanctified. This moral not agreeing with his notions he prepared to reply; but according to my intentions of employing heat and spirit to affect him, I interrupted his speculations, which might lead me too far, and of which the success was doubtful. I briskly mentioned honour and gratitude, which, next to religion, are the things the world hold most sacred, and in comparison of which I maintained, that all other human views and considerations ought to be sacrificed. I traced over a-new all the obligations of Sarah Fincer. I laid no stress on her charms, but as a sort of recompence for having followed virtuous inclinations; but not forgetting the excellency of her character, I demanded of him, if in the competition itself of true merit she might fear to be distanced in any comparison, and if in this he could on the contrary propose any other woman, who could join to the same number of virtues and amiable qualities a right to please, so well acquired by a train of innumerable services. These are titles, said I, so holy and inviolable, that can never be weakened. Look on them nevertheless as so many chimeras. Trample under your feet all these duties, and all these rights. Go, begone, if you are determined; but take care how you present yourself before Sarah. What do I say? Fly from the sight of mankind. They will treat you here as a monster, they will not consider you but with horror and contempt; and do not imagine you will be looked upon with any other eye in any place that

that has heard of the unworthiness of your sentiments. Believe me, you may carefully conceal your name; that will not suffice to hide from yourself a procedure, of which you will never be able to speak without confusion. You need not doubt but the rumour of it will be soon spread abroad. Disgrace and shame will stick close to your steps, and you ought to think that they will pursue you through all Europe.

But where will you go, added I, fixing my eyes upon his, what resource have you to fly to? Have you reflected, that you are without money, without assistance, and without hopes of obtaining any? The dependence you may think you have on me fails you by the new engagement I have just now entered into for obtaining your liberty; for you know that the door of your prison is but half opened and that for satisfying the claims of the keeper I must give up for near a year my whole revenue. You are witness of the promise I made him in writing. What then remains for me to offer you? Alas! Rose herself, added I in a tender tone, and softening into tears, Rose will also find herself bereaved of my succour. What I have done for you is so much retrenched from what I had destined to relieve her misery. See however if there be any thing so moving as her complaints, and so terrible as her situation. I gave him Rose's letter, which he opened with eagerness, after having observed her hand-writing. He read it with the same ardour. I saw immediately his tears began to flow. From whatever source they came, I took them for a good omen of my victory; and pressing him anew by those motives reunited to honour, to interest, to gratitude, and to natural tenderness, I in the end drew from his mouth an absolute resignation to all my will. The sighs and lamentations, with which it was accompanied, were the remains of weakness which I forgave to the violence he did his inclinations. But being persuaded, as I ought to be, that we both hearkened to the voice of our duty, I was less sensible to pity than to joy, and I thought of nothing but of laying hold of a disposition, which  
might

might yet change. I called for the keeper, to make an end of settling the expences. My surprise was extreme to find by his answer, that both he and the messenger were satisfied; and that during the time I had been discoursing with my brother, somebody brought him in our name a sum of money, which exceeded his pretensions. I was not long in discovering to whom we were obliged for this new favour: It was Sarah, who being taken up with nothing but the success of her pains, had been informed as soon as I of all that might yet retard them.

Patrick confessed to me in the midst of his troubles, that he was sensible of the value of so many generosities. We went directly to Sarah, whose eagerness it was just we should satisfy by our first visit. It was in our way to her, that calling to mind the power I was invested with to regulate the time and ceremony of the marriage, I thought it necessary not to allow Patrick one moment for cooling. I gave private orders to a servant, who attended me, to give notice to an ecclesiastic, whom I had already preposited with the matter; and not doubting but my project would be approved by Sarah and Dilnick, I resolved to take advantage of the hurry of the first compliments for sealing our common good fortune by the ceremonies of the church. Patrick marched on a long time without speaking a word. I am disquieted, says he in the end, with the part I am to act. How shall I appear, without being covered with confusion, in the presence of a lady to whom I owe such large obligations, with so little hope of ever having it in my power to make a suitable return? I was ravished to see his reflections take this turn. We came near Sarah's lodgings. Your inquietude is just, says I, if you lose sight of your promises, and of all the reasons you have for engaging you to them; but with a little integrity in the observance of your honour, you will feel less confusion than joy and assurance at the sight of a lady who is in expectation of her happiness from you. And shewing him the door

the moment he thought the least of it, I introduced him in hastily, without lending an ear to his answer.

Sarah herself appeared a little disconcerted at seeing us arrive without being expected there. Her blushes and those of Patrick would have made an agreeable scene for unconcerted spectators. But willing to spare them all explanations that might favour any thing of constraint, I all at one stroke came to the point, which they would have spun out to a great length. In presenting my brother, I said thus to Sarah: I offer you a gentleman who is your's by all kind of rights; and his happiness is this day to find his duty in that thing which is capable of flattering his most tender inclinations. If he may judge of the sentiments you have for him, by the generous proofs he has received of them, you ought to judge of his by your own favours, and by the opinion you have had of him, when you thought him worthy of them. Engagements of this nature have already all the force of marriage contracts, and the ceremonies of the church are only necessary to sanctify them; nor shall they be long retarded, added I looking at Sarah; and if you give credit to the ardour of those sentiments, which I ought to share with my brother, I shall this day have the satisfaction of calling you my sister-in-law. I waited a moment for her answer, which she did not pronounce, but expressed her consent by a gracious and modest bow. Patrick, to whom I did not give time to open his mouth, took this opportunity to address her with some compliments, which were less tender than civil and witty; yet speaking nevertheless of his being made by her a fortunate man worthy of envy, he added, that he durst not so readily accept what I had proposed, and that he desired time to merit her: I apprehended the meaning of his compliment, and trembling to see myself obliged to new discussions in the presence of Sarah, I turned myself to Dilnick, and asked him without affectation, if he was not of my opinion, not to defer a matter  
which

which might be executed the same moment. He answered me smiling, that such a proceeding would be to do service to both of them, and that Patrick upon the whole had need of this comfort at the conclusion of a tedious imprisonment. Happily the ecclesiastic, to whom I had given notice, appeared with two surplices under his arm, and the church ritual in his hand. See, said I to them, if my zeal be likely to leave any thing undone; and immediately putting on one of the surplices, I took Sarah's hand and put it into that of Patrick. He looked on me with a forbidding eye. How will Rose, said I to support him, receive the consolation of so happy news! a short prayer, their consent, which I made them pronounce in a few words, and my benediction, which I gave them, taking thereof the testimony of the standers-by, made the essence of this ceremony. The indissoluble knot being thus tied, I made them kneel down with me to put the finishing hand to it with less precipitation. My heart warmed with joy and tenderness, in thanking heaven for the happy termination of my desires. God himself was my witness, that I had nothing in view but his glory, the happiness of my brother, the interest of our family, and the decorum even of the world, so far as it agreed with religion. One will find in the sequel of our history, what necessity there is to lay a stress on all these circumstances.

Whatever sentiments might arise in Patrick's heart, he had too much honour and judgment not to be sensible what he owed to his engagements. He kissed his spouse after the conclusion of our prayers, and although he did not shew all the ardour I could have wished in his embraces, he at least let nothing escape him that might make his disposition suspected. As to her, it appeared visible that she really thought this the happiest day of her life. The joy that sparkled in her eyes, her modest caresses, her looks, her attentions, made me think more than once that she had made a man of Patrick. The question now was to

confirm the seal of the church by a civil act, according to the ordinary method. I had reason to foresee, that I should have no need of precautions to dispose her to treat my brother favourably. She gave him all those prerogatives that were authorized by the laws, and being willing, as she said, to hold all from him with her heart, she the same moment gave up to him the sums of money she had brought with her, with the keys of all her trunks, and even those of her closets at Antrim. In vain he refused to receive them. She exacted this of him as a piece of complaisance, which she said she would take as a good omen of their eternal love. I applauded these tender transports, and did not at all doubt but that, delicate as I knew Patrick to be, he would soon in spite of himself take a relish and affection for a woman so amiable.

Dilnick, who loved the pleasures of the table, spake nothing but of celebrating the solemnity with a sumptuous dinner, which he was at the trouble of preparing. He had invited with the consent of my sister-in-law three of his friends, whom he had already acquainted with our rejoicings, and who well enough knew mine and Sarah's father, to take a share in the happiness of these two families. They came at the hour appointed ; but nothing could equal our astonishment, when we saw enter with them my lord Linch, who threw himself with transport about Patrick's neck. He had been in Dublin for some days, and being acquainted with one of Dilnick's friends, from whom he had learned all the circumstances of our affairs, which he only knew imperfectly before from public fame, he had not power to resist his impatience to embrace us. The remembrance of what had passed did not hinder Patrick from receiving him with a great deal of friendship. His first offences had been repaired by his own disasters, and by the zeal he had afterwards discovered for the service of my brothers. Moreover, his love for Rose continuing still the same, we could not look upon him



him as an enemy to our family, to which he was impatient to knit himself in the strictest bonds. He was not ignorant of the melancholy situation of Rose ; and was not only one of those of whose pains and importunities she had complained, but even the interest he took in her troubles, and his desire to obtain from her and from us the liberty to put an end to them, was the principal cause of his voyage. Nevertheless, his discretion not permitting him to open himself in the first moment upon all his views, he limited himself at first to compliments upon the marriage of my brother, and prayed us to give him leave to dine with us.

We sat down to table with all the preparatives that might promise us mirth. Patrick himself, whom I continually watched, seemed to behave with a good grace at the feast ; and although I could perceive some remains of melancholy in his eyes, I was persuaded that the charms and love of his spouse would soon triumph over it. I quickened him myself to give himself up to pleasure, and my naturally serious character did not prevent my entering into the dispositions of the company, which Dilnick gave life to by his gaiety and merry conversation. In fine, all the company seemed given up to the same sentiments, when my lord Linch, among many compliments addressed to the bride and bridegroom, thought proper to mix with them apologies for the ill offices he had done him at Paris. He turned them indeed in a manner so gallant, that they could not be offensive to Sarah ; but in congratulating himself for having contributed without design to Patrick's unhappiness in Ireland, he fortified those gloomy reflections which I had taken pains to dissipate, and which had already acted but too powerfully on his heart ; at least, I did not observe any thing else to which I could more probably ascribe the dismal effects they produced. I observed that they made an impression on Patrick, and I did what I could to give another turn to the conversation. He took notice of my constraint, which contributed perhaps

some moments to redouble his. But sinking at last under the weight that oppressed his heart, he got up without saying one word, and went to take breath in an adjoining chamber. Not being deceived in the meaning of this his motion, I rose up also to follow him, with a view only of bringing him to himself by a short exhortation. They took my going out as a token of some alarm, which they supposed I had for his health. All the company, having the same opinion of it, rose from table as it were with one consent, and followed me, every one inquiring with an air of dissatisfaction whether he was ill. He had seated himself near a table, on which he had leaned his elbow, with his head supported by his hand. Whether it were that the eagerness of so many people who followed him, or it may be the fear that they had in some measure penetrated into the cause of his agitations, was the cause of such a sudden revolution, or whether the weight of his sufferings began in reality to surpass his strength, but we had not been long about him before he fell down at our feet without understanding or sense.

Help being near at hand, it was not long before he recovered his senses; his spouse was the most zealous in making use of all sorts of applications. He took notice of her great care, and, moved without doubt by so much affection, took one of her hands and kissed it with great respect. The physicians, who were immediately called in, found him in a violent fever. They obliged him to go to bed, and imagining that rest was most necessary for him, they ordered that he should be left alone some hours without being disturbed. Upon consideration of the circumstances of this accident, they were of opinion to ascribe it to his imprudence, in exposing himself all at once to the air upon his getting out of the castle, and to a too sudden passage from the sadness and melancholy of a prison to the joys of a feast. Far from opposing their error, I was over-joyed to see the whole company disposed to think this explanation just and natural.

They

They composed themselves upon the word of the physicians, and even Sarah, notwithstanding her inquietude, was prevailed upon to return to table with the company.

I had notions widely different of what had happened, and I burned with an impatience to find a decent pretence of stealing from the company to the sick man's bed, to whom I judged that a moment of my discourse would be more necessary than rest. I took occasion to do so under some pretext or other, and stopped Sarah, who was as forward as I to go to see him. He gave a deep sigh upon seeing me approach. I sat down near him, and continued some moments without opening my mouth, pretending in appearance to be careful not to disturb him, but at the bottom to wait till he had opened his heart, and began first to explain himself. In fine, seeing him continue to keep silence, I told him how uneasy his fainting fits had made us, and of our hopes nevertheless, that this accident would not be attended with bad consequences in such a constitution as his. Ah ! says he in a low voice, as if he feared to be over-heard, the consequences I fear are not such as may threaten my health or life ; the sacrifice then is made, and I commit both to heaven. What notions are these ? interrupted I him in haste ; you alarm me with a discourse that gives me pain to comprehend. I guess your alarms, replied he immediately ; but I cannot cure them, and you might have foreseen them. I have sacrificed myself to your will, and to the interest of my family : Do you then demand of me more ? But Sarah, interrupted I again, have you not for a spouse——He stopped me short : I have for Sarah, says he, what I promised you for her, all the respect in the world for her virtues ; I am sensible of her high worth, and do not admire less than you her goodness and charms. I have gratitude for her favours, complaisance and attention to all her desires. It is your business, who have taken upon you to unite our destinies, to declare to her what I am ca-

J 4

pable

pable of doing in our engagements, and under what conditions I can be her's. I have borne no other part in this affair than a blind submission, which made me relinquish all care of myself for the interest and honour of others. You cannot be ignorant of this. I have no occasion to repeat what I have sworn to you a thousand times in the presence of heaven. Take then upon you, added he with a sort of indifference, the success of your enterprise, as you have taken upon you the project and execution of it. If you think that Sarah expects more than you had a right to promise her, or than I can offer her, make her lay aside this hope; prepare her this very day for the conduct which I am to hold towards her: Represent me as of a nature cold, distracted, melancholy, unfociable; add to it, if you will, that I shall never be to her the less respectful or obliging. This is all she has to expect; and I cannot promise more.

A discourse so strange, and the tone in which it was pronounced, raised in me a distress that I could not suddenly get rid of. Under the embarrassment I was in to answer it, I repeated, as I had done a thousand times before, all the motives that engaged me to wish for this fatal marriage, and the steps I had taken to bring it to an issue. Neither my views nor my conduct representing to me any thing criminal, I possibly should have armed myself with all the authority of my profession and my age, against an obstinate caprice, which I thought wounded all sorts of rights, and every kind of reason, if I had not observed Sarah coming to us. Her presence provided me with a better remedy than I could administer to the disgusts of my brother, and not in the least doubting but he would treat her with as much civility as he proposed coldness, I chose to leave them together.

I found my lord Linch, who burned with a desire of entertaining me in private. I answered his eagerness. The chance, said he, that has procured me the

the honour of seeing you here, has spared me a journey that I intended to make to Coleraine. My interests have not had a less share in my voyage than yours, or rather, my strongest passion being to unite them, I have set them forth already in such a manner as to give me hopes that they might not be any longer distinct. He continued to relate to me all that had followed his quarrel with my brothers, of which he supposed I had been informed by their letters. The imprisonment, says he, of George, the danger of the same fortune to which I was exposed, and which I could not have escaped but by changing my cloaths and name at Paris, where nevertheless my fear did not hinder me from strenuously soliciting your brother's pardon; the price which Rose had put on the success of my zeal; the misfortune I had of failing in it by the inflexible rigour of the court; in fine, the retreat of Rose into a convent, and the departure of Patrick, were the preludes that gave me hopes to engage you in my interests, and drew me back to Ireland. As the desire of hearing some new circumstances made me listen to him with patience, If you have heard, pursued he, one part of this detail from the mouth of Patrick, you are both of you doubtless ignorant, that Rose has left the convent to which she had retired. By my inquiries I discovered her new sanctuary, and for ever full of that tenderness with which she had inspired me, I made her a new offer of the disposal of my fortune. She refused to see me; she rejected also from my hands those assistances which were too trifling for her acceptance; but I do not know how much she may stand in need of them in her present situation. In fine, pushed on by love, and persuaded that a young lady has not much to complain of, when one forces her to become rich and happy, I hired, under a borrowed name, an apartment joining to her's, in a neighbouring house. Our apartments being separated by nothing but a common wall, I had a hole cut in it without noise; and that part of the thickness which

I left might be thrust in with the least force. My design was, if I may confess it without shame, under the cover of the night to steal away a person whom I adored, and without whom I have no happiness to hope for. The respect I owed to her birth and virtue did not suffer me to form this enterprize without taking proper measures to marry her on the spot. Nevertheless, on the eve of the execution a scruple of honour held me back. I thought, that if the reputation of your sister had nothing to suffer, when a reparation should be made for my force by a lawful marriage, yet a house to which I owed respect, and which was allied to mine, would evermore take from such an action some stain; without reckoning, that not daring to hope from you and your brothers an approbation of so hardy an attempt, I should expose myself to the necessity of living with you in an eternal discord. These considerations prevailed. Without absolutely renouncing my design, which I looked upon as the only way to vanquish the heart of Rose, I determined to communicate it to your brother. I obtained the liberty to see him in the Bastile. He received me without any mark of resentment, confessing, that he should with pleasure see me his sister's husband, if the tenderness he had for her did not make him fear to force her inclinations. He could not hear me mention the troubles in which she was involved, without accusing her of having precipitated herself into them, and without lamenting her wilfulness, which brought on all our common disgraces. I laid hold of this opportunity to discover to him my designs, and to press him to approve them. My candour and openness moved him. He added but one condition to the step I was intending to take; which was, to communicate it to his brothers, and obtain their approbation, as he granted his to me. I have brought it here under his hand, added he; and though my affairs are not yet ended at St Germain, yet I have nothing so urgent, as to finish this one, upon which all the happiness of my life depends.

depends. He immediately shewed me George's note, which contained no more than a bare consent to the marriage of my lord Linch with Rose ———, his sister; without any express mention of a rape. And he added to his story the most tender and pressing instances, in offering to me even an absolute command of his fortune, which, said he, I will put into your hands.

Although a proposal of this nature had began to work in me a change, and that it appeared to call for all my reflections, yet the necessary answer to it caused me but little embarrassment. I thanked my lord Linch for the inclination he preserved for my sister. Having thoughts every moment, says I, of going myself to Paris, I flatter myself to have conserved power enough over Rose's mind to make her relish every thing which is agreeable to prudence and the honour of her family. I hope that we shall have no occasion for violent expedients: But when it becomes necessary to employ them, you will think it proper not to do so, till you have exhausted all other remedies. This manner of declaring myself, which was neither opposite to his views, nor too favourable to his hopes, left me power of thoroughly searching into the advantages of an alliance, of which I had heard nothing of the first project but from Patrick's relation. Moreover, I was positively resolved not to defer longer my departure for France; and to the zeal with which I had forwarded Patrick's marriage, I joined almost an equal longing to find myself at liberty of applying all my pains to the consolation of my sister. In the mean time, I could not forbear shewing to my lord Linch how much I was alarmed at the wall half pierced through, which left her, as it were, open to a discovery; but he removed my fears by informing me, that he had left in the apartment a woman, whom he had intended, during his first views, to wait upon Rose; and that all his domestics were lodged by his orders, in several houses of the neighbourhood, to be ready not only to assist  
my

my sister upon all occasions, but also to watch her; and, upon the whole, to follow her, if by any reason she should find it necessary to change her lodgings. I thought she was in safety under these precautions; but what idea ought I to form of her lot, when joining such strange circumstances to those of her letter, I represented her to myself all at one view wrestling against misery, and, as it were, environed by an herd of ravenous wolves, who had designs on her repose and liberty? The project, from which the favour of heaven had diverted my lord Linch, might it not start the like desire in the duke of ——— and those other lovers whom she did not name? To what was she perpetually exposed! I should have gone off immediately, if I had consulted nothing but my zeal; and my lord Linch, who thought me already fixed in his interests, made use of the confession I had made of my intentions, to press me not at all to defer them. I was stopped only by two reasons; the desire to see Patrick established in a state of tranquillity in the county of Antrim before my departure, and the necessity of making up a sum of money sufficient to keep me from a dependence on any person in Paris.

My lord Linch would have broke the matter to Patrick, but I intreated him to leave that task to me; and returning to my brother's bed, where I yet found his spouse, their hands being tenderly twisted within each other, I drew an omen so favourable from the situation in which I surprised them, that I thought I might use more freedom with my sister-in law, and treat of our affairs in her presence, as of an interest common to us all. I apprised them of the subject of my lord Linch's journey, his proposals, and the instances with which he pressed me to be gone. Although I avoided to touch on the melancholy situation of Rose, Sarah comprehended, that a young lady, exposed to a rape, against which she had no defence, was not in a very desirable situation; and the tenderness of her heart taking the alarm all at once for Patrick's sister, she was the first to interrupt me, in requiring



two things, on which she insisted with the same zeal: You will be cruel, says she to me, in lending your hand to the running away with Rose, and in desiring to marry her against her will to my lord Linch. I know he is rich; but does happiness consist in riches? If the fortune of my sister does not correspond with your desires, added she, already owning so tender a name, bring her over into Ireland. Shall I not be exceeding happy in having a companion so dear, and the power of contributing to her establishment? Then squeezing her husband's hands, she requested of him the liberty and the return of Rose, as two favours which she would have granted.

I discovered in my brother's eyes, that his mind was not yet free from trouble. Nevertheless, without scruple siding with the sentiments of Sarah, he joined in her request, and intreated me not to retard the execution of what she desired. We agreed, that without explaining ourselves openly to my lord Linch, we should make him our acknowledgments in the terms I had already done; and that if he was disposed to go off as soon as I, I should not refuse to take the journey with him. Sarah would not at all listen to what I had represented, of the necessity I was in to go first to the county of Antrim. She told me, that it was but just that Patrick and she would bear all the charges of my enterprise, since they had laid on me the burden of the trouble and success. My departure was settled for the next day. I communicated this resolution immediately to my lord Linch, who without hesitation answered, that he would be ready to accompany me.

After so many cares and inquietudes, I should have began to have found some sweetness in hopes, if I could have gone away more calm in relation to the situation of Patrick. I employed myself in these ideas some part of the afternoon, waiting an opportunity to speak to him without witness. His fever was not yet abated; and in whatever manner I might explain that air of complaisance I thought I saw  
in

in him for his spouse, yet I could not attribute the disorders of his health to any thing but the agitation of his mind. My wished for moment came, having found him alone. I am leaving you, says I, and if I forsake you while you are under an uncertain state of health, yet I carry away at least the pleasure of believing, that you are a little more sensible of the merit of your spouse. I have observed the progress she has made in your heart, and I have given thanks to heaven from the bottom of mine. He interrupted me——Ah ! said he with a languishing voice, continue to hold this opinion ; I wish that she also may embrace it : You will both then be satisfied, and I shall be the only miserable wretch. How ! replied I with astonishment, have you no thoughts of living happily with her, and will you deny those sentiments, which a man of honour ought to have for an amiable and virtuous woman ? What signify then the caresses which you sometimes shew to her ? He conjured me not to irritate his trouble, and to remember what he had told me four hours before, as a rule from which he would never swerve. I have a gentle and complying temper, continued he, I am not capable of resisting the advances of a woman ; and when Sarah comes to over-burthen me, as now and then she does, with the obliging marks of her tenderness and disquiet, I cannot have the brutality to push her from me : But all I can do to help her tranquillity will be for ever useless to mine. Why do you put me upon this melancholy subject, added he, interrupting himself, do not you remember all I have promised you ?

I thought that being yet filled with his prepossessions, it would be of no avail to oppose them on the eve of my departure. I would have broke off this discourse at that time, and recommending him to heaven, I should have had nothing else to employ me but the preparations for my voyage, if he had not told me himself, that he had something of importance to communicate to me. Drawing near him I observed, that his face was overspread with blushes. He prayed me—  
to

to listen to him, and began this discourse :—Alas ! what compass of words am I obliged to use to discover to you a secret, which the present circumstances will not permit me to conceal from you longer ? You are going to Paris, where you may hope perhaps to find de Pesses again. But he is gone a far journey. If you remember the relation I made you at Coleraine, you must have observed that I praised his zeal, and confessed the inclination I had to serve him with Rose ; but that which you might have believed to proceed from gratitude and friendship has its rise from another cause. After the ruin of our affairs, and at the time that he offered me all his substance to re-establish them, I made him my confidant in my most grievous misfortunes. My passion for madam de L—— and her unforeseen escape, which left me in ignorance even of the road she took, touched a heart that love had subjected to the same torments. His interest perhaps made him offer me a service, of which the reward ought to be of the same nature. In one word, he undertook a journey into Germany, (where I am persuaded Mr de L—— is retired with his daughter) and to visit many large cities, where that gentleman has been employed in the king's affairs. The return he proposed to me was to take care of the heart of Rose, while he was running half over Europe to secure me one which I thought ready to be lost. In the zeal of an unhappy passion I promised him much more than perhaps he durst hope for. Not having then perceived that Rose had any other reasons to repulse him, than what George had inspired her with, I flattered myself that I could surmount them. George, says I, has been a long time in the Bastile ; the dean loves you ; Rose herself has never yet discovered any aversion to you, and I have always imagined that she would give you the preference, if she could listen to her heart rather than to her ambition. In fine, I promised to have the same zeal for his interests that he had for mine ; and to give more force to this engagement, I gave him a  
writing

writing signed by my name, with all the formalities that might bind a man of honour.

It is true, that being willing to begin immediately to prepossess Rose in his favour, I observed, that without discovering any tokens of hatred, she did not receive my impressions so readily as I flattered myself she would. I should have suspected that her heart was filled with some other passion, if I had not known a long time before by demonstrable proofs, that the duke of ——— and my lord Linch, whose applications had made a noise, were far from pleasing her; and during my assiduities to see her in the convent, I did not at all perceive that she there received any other visits than mine. However, going one day to visit her at a different hour than I ordinarily did without any design, I was alone waiting for her at the grate, when I saw a servant without a livery, thrusting his head many times to the door as if he expected an answer which he was tired with waiting for. This at least was the opinion with which his curiosity furnished me, and not being able to resist mine, I plainly asked him what he waited for. He confessed that he waited for the orders of a pensioner of the convent to whom he had delivered a letter. Madam de———! says I, naming my sister. He owned it was she. I took a resolution on the spot which will surprise you. Very well says I, I shall be discreet, and will not at all interrupt you.—Going afterwards from the parlour, I gave him time to receive the answer he waited for; but being four steps from the grate with my footman, and having seen him go out, I stopped him, and threatened him with the greatest extremities, if he did not give me up the letter which he had received. In a desert-place, wherein no-body could see us, he could not refuse to obey me. I immediately withdrew to return home, and delayed reading a piece of such concern until I got there. My footman gave me notice that the other followed us; but having no measures to ob-

serve.

serve in an affair of this nature, I affected to continue my road without giving him any attention.

Judge with what eagerness I opened my sister's letter. It contained but six lines, of which I remember every word. I shall never hearken, says she, to a proposal that wounds my duty; do not renew it any more, if you would have me preserve the opinion I have hitherto had of you. Is it not enough to have wrested from me a consent, with which I reproach myself? and what reason can I have to build upon your esteem, without which I could not be sensible of your love, if the ways you would prescribe me are only proper to make me lose it? Wait until my affairs are cleared up, it shall be my duty then to hearken to your love; but it is your's to-day not to abuse my inclination for you, and the embarrassment in which I am.

The reading of this letter, continued Patrick, raised in me no other emotion than that of surprise. It was no extraordinary matter that a young lady as amiable as Rose should please every one who knew her, and I should not impute it to her as a crime to be herself sensible of the love of a man of merit. Besides, judging of her engagements by her expressions, I could not accuse her of having stepped out of certain bounds, within which it seemed to me that love might easily be made to square with honour. But I could not recover from my surprise, when I considered what address she had need of to disguise from us a passion, that could not be new born, and which could not engage her in a commerce of letters without having made great progress in her heart. I inquired who might be this happy lover, who was preferred to the duke of ———, to Mr de Pesses, and my lord Linch. Nothing presented itself to my memory that could get me out of this doubt, when my footman came to give me notice, that a man well dressed and of a good appearance required to speak with me. He added, that there was no sign that he knew me, since in demanding to see me he did  
not

not mention me by my name, nor by any other term than that of my master. I did not at all doubt but that this visit had some relation to my sister's letter, and all the fears that might remain on the former affair did not prevent my receiving him. The unknown was in reality a man of good mien. He advanced boldly, and in a fierce tone demanded by what right and with what views I had used violence in making myself master of a letter in which I had no concern. I smiled at this question, which he meant as a menace; and without giving a very serious air to my answer, it is true, says I, I should have rights abundantly clear over madam de ———, if I had been her father; but in reality she is only my sister. These two words having cleared up his doubts, he made me an apology with a disturbed air, and falling upon the merit of Rose, he complimented me upon being the brother of such a charming lady. Yes, interrupted I, in a tone more resolute, young and charming, but worthy also to be respected for her birth, and the honour of her sentiments: And whoever should think of her without making honour his guide, would expose himself to the hazard of finding an obstacle in the way. I commend this generous warmth, says the stranger, and shall do all justice to it in my report, for it is not my own interest, added he, that has brought me here. He rose up, and having civilly renewed his excuses retired, without suffering me to wait on him even to the door.

This conversation left me more disquietude than vexed. The opinion I had of Rose and the very expressions of her letter were sufficient vouchers for her virtue; but I could have wished to have discovered who it was that stood so well in her heart, and what way he took to arrive at it. Not hoping for these discoveries but from herself, I resolved not to wait till she might be forewarned by her lover. I returned to her grate, and not finding her informed of any thing that had passed, I took occasion, from some  
new

new instances in favour of de Pesses, to signify to her, that I believed she had other reasons for her coldness than her natural indifference. I would not at all expose her to have recourse to any disguise in defending herself, but confessing that chance had thrown a discovery of something in my way that I was not in search of, I lamented that she should fail in confidence for a brother, who loved her so tenderly. She was not at all capable of those artifices which I desired to prevent. Candour was in her eyes and on her lips. She seized my hands blushing, and asking pardon for her bashfulness more than for her diffidence, she promised to acquaint me with what she had a long time reproached herself for having concealed from my knowledge. But interrupting herself immediately, do you then know him, says she casting down her eyes, can you inform me of his name?

This question pronounced with vivacity, though with a pensive air, gave me thoroughly to understand, that Rose's wound was not only deep, but that there were some extraordinary circumstances in her adventure. I was impatient to learn this strange secret. You remember, said she at last, the first ball that you and George carried me to. The assiduity which the duke, of ——— shewed about me did not hinder my remarking, that I was observed with as much application by a man whose figure and attention greatly interested me in his behalf. He changed places twenty times, to get into those that were near mine, where he might more commodiously see me. I was too much on my guard to let him perceive that I was smitten with the perseverance of his looks; but it is true that I then felt the effects which were yet unknown to me. I should have had the curiosity to inquire into his quality and name, if decency had not put a stop to any such thought; so that I slipped the only opportunity that ever I had of knowing them. Nevertheless, other cares having almost effaced the remembrance of him, there remained with me only a feeble impression of him, when George took it in his thoughts to leave you with the dean, and to settle himself.

himself with me in another house. I had no other motive for following him but an ascendant he had gained over my mind. The first time I went abroad to church I was like one scared to find at my side this same man, whom I took a pleasure in looking at before at the ball. He confessed to me that he did not owe this meeting to chance. All his employment had been to find me out. He at length got the opportunity of discovering to me a share of his sentiments. What can I say in justification of my having heard them? He unfolded them to me indeed with so much respect and softness, that I felt all my inclination awakened. My fear gave place to confidence. Without wounding modesty by my answer, I defended myself only by general reasons of decorum and honour, which would not suffer me to receive his applications without the approbation of my brothers. Far from complaining of my thoughts, he assured me, he esteemed himself happy in finding them such as he expected; and not being capable he said, of loving without esteem, he swore to me sincerity and constancy, and did not fear to witness his oaths by him whom we were going to adore at church. But when I repeated to him, that I depended on my brothers, and that there was nothing I could put in balance with my duty, he confessed to me with a disturbed air, that invincible reasons laid him under a necessity of putting a constraint upon himself; that bearing a name known in the world, and enjoying a secure and established fortune, he had good reasons to promise himself that my brothers would not reject him, when he could publicly offer me his services, but that he was compelled by a motive, which would one day appear honourable in their eyes, to keep himself for some time concealed even from me; and proposing to himself my happiness as much as his own, he conjured me to receive his addresses privately, and to regulate the manner he should make them with all the rigour of my virtue.

This



This proposal, continued Rose, appeared to me so injurious, that my resentment made me immediately break up a conversation that had endured too long. No, says I, strains of this nature are utterly unknown to me, and my duty teaches me to fly when any one dare propose them. We were at the church door, where the throng did not suffer us to enter easily, which made me fear lest he should continue his conversation whether I would or not. But if this reason favoured the relish I had of hearing him at first, it now served me for a pretence to step hastily into the coach that waited for me, and drive off to a church more remote.

I was so moved to hear Rose, that I had no thoughts of interrupting her. All the satisfaction, pursued she, that I felt in preferring my duty to the inclinations of my heart, did not defend me from a secret grief, until with a deep sigh I asked myself, how it happened that duty and love were so unhappily opposites, and by what disposition of heaven it fell out that the sweets adhering to our weaknesses were more poignant than those annexed to virtue? The features which I came from seeing were present to my eyes; the sound of his voice, the turn of his expressions, yet beat upon my ears. I found a relation so sweet between the impression on my senses and the movements of my heart, that after a world of reflections I could not doubt, that the sacrifice I came from making was not the sacrifice of all my happiness. Nevertheless, I was supported with the contemplation of my duty. The ball of the hotel de Carnavallet, where I again saw the cause of all my inquietudes, made no change in my principles. I even avoided speaking to him, and the regret of removing myself from him made no part in the difficulty I had in following you.

Here I could not hinder myself from asking my sister, why she did not at least consult George upon an adventure so singular, and what reason she had to keep it a secret from him. He, said she, entertained me with nothing but the hopes he had conceived

ceived of seeing me make a brilliant fortune. The example of the duke of ———, who was not discouraged at all my indifferences, made him believe that it would be sufficient for me to appear at court, or in the belle assemblies of the town, to draw to me the affections of a crowd of lovers. I never had the courage to confess to him the inclination I felt for an unknown man. You all three have accustomed me, added she tenderly, to regard you as so many masters. Then returning to her story — I could then flatter myself to have my heart free, yet not so as to be more disposed to enter into other engagements, for which this adventure made me even lose the relish; so that Mr de Pesses and my lord Linch were little capable of moving me. It was only a submission to the advice of my brothers that determined me successively to bear them. Call to your mind the inclination I had for solitude; in those retirements sorrowfully had the pleasure of recalling to my memory the happiness I had renounced, and I fortified myself in my indifference for men to that degree, that I thought to harden myself against him who alone knew how to please me. In the mean time we had scarce arrived at Paris, when the sight of madam de L——, whose acquaintance you procured me, your reciprocal tenderness, your protestations of love and constancy, in fine, your happiness, of which I was a witness, made me perceive more than ever, that something was wanting to mine. I could not disguise from you my sentiments; you drew from me the confession of it by your instances and your caresses. It is to this fatal confidence that we ought to ascribe all our misfortunes. When necessity made me take the resolution of entering into this convent, I then gave thanks to heaven, and considered, that for a woman, who has nothing to hope from love or fortune, a retreat is a lot that cannot be chosen too speedily. I do not know how far this reflection might have carried me, if on the second day of my entrance into this house I had not relapsed

lapsed into new difficulties by an unforeseen adventure. I was informed that some-body wanted me at the grate. I fancied immediately that it was you or Mr de Pesses. But imagine my surprise, when upon opening the door of the parlour I saw my unknown. Perhaps I ought to have retired. There is something due also to decorum and good-manners. It is certain I remained at first irresolute; and he having observed my confusion, addressed me in such respectful and tender importunities, that they had the power of stopping me. Without informing me how he had discovered my abode, after having taken a thousand unsuccessful pains to find me, during our retirement at Saïsons, he conjured me to determine the duration of his life, which he said depended on the pity he implored. I was melted at his air, in which indeed I thought I had observed an abject heaviness and languishment. Nevertheless, though I was possessed of this opinion, I made no difficulty to answer him, that I was offended at a visit which wounded all my duties, and that I would not receive any person, who was not recommended to me by my brother. I turned about to leave him. He cast himself on his knees; do not throw into despair, says he, a man who adores you; I dare not vaunt to you the value of my heart, but you shall know——how! interrupted I, without having taken the pains to explain yourself to my brothers! This answer, which escaped me in my emotion, finished his consternation. Ah! cried he, I have cruel reasons to impose on me silence, which you yourself will one day approve. But they are at an end. I ask you no more than a permission to love you, and hopes to be one day your's. I shall renounce even the pleasure of seeing you; I shall do myself this dreadful violence, if you flatter me with the least hope for a day to come, which cannot be far off. Not seeing any thing in these intreaties that could engage me in an honourable composition, I left him without making a reply, having saluted him civilly. He appeared no more afterwards

terwards at the grate. But this very morning a letter came to me, which I opened in haste, thinking only that it might contain some account of our affairs. Though it had not a name to it, and that I had no reason to know whose hand-writing it was, yet I discovered by the first lines that it came from him. He appeared to be informed not only of George's and your misfortunes, but of the need I had of a thousand things necessary for the conveniences of life. He lamented my afflictions like a passionate lover, and that what he only proposed being my tranquillity and happiness, he conjured me to accept of a house thoroughly furnished, where I should be served to the full of my desires, and where he promised never to see me, till his affairs gave him the liberty of offering me his fortune and hand. You see, if my candour and frankness be without reserve, I cannot conceal that this appearance of disinterestedness touched my heart to the bottom. I shed tears in contemplating on my lot, which condemned me to reject the adorations of a man so amiable and so generous. I could not defend myself from giving him at least a civil answer. In refusing his offer, I gave him hopes by some indefinite terms, that if his affairs and mine should clear up ——— in fine, that if the just difficulties that stood in the way should cease ———

I hear you, interrupted I, in order to relieve her embarrassment, which I saw increase; these are appearances that promise an extraordinary lover; and I reproach you for not having sooner given me these hints, which might have helped just now to have made a discovery at least of his name. But what can one think, added I, of his obscure reasons, which hinder him from following his inclinations, and make him even dread being known? Is he so young, that one may imagine him to be constrained by the authority of his family? She told me, that he could not be much under thirty years of age. Has he any lawsuit, replied I, any affair of honour, that might oblige

lige him to conceal himself, or, it may be, some stain or blemish with which he durst not make a public appearance in the world? I laid also before Rose's eyes all that prudence might make her fear, with an intention not so much to combat an inclination which appeared to me to be strongly manifested, as for keeping my word given to de Pesses, in avoiding at least to side against his interests. This address had some success. Rose, being entirely filled with these ideas, thought of nothing but to bring me to an explanation of my first discourse, which had given rise to her story. She embarrassed me at first by her importunity; but becoming less urgent, when I assured her that I did not know the name of her lover, I had time to range my thoughts in order, after a manner that was not capable of giving her any vexation. I left her in ignorance that I was possessed of her letter: and in all that followed I observed a medium with which she was satisfied.

Nevertheless, I ardently wished for an end of this conversation, to pursue the hope I had of discovering this unknown lover. I had scarce left Rose, when I placed two men to watch at the gate of the convent, with orders to observe if any one came to inquire for my sister, and that one of them should immediately run and give me notice. For my part I went home where I was not intirely without hopes of receiving a second visit from the stranger whom I had already seen. If he refused giving me further light into the matter, my resolution was to challenge him out at all sorts of risques. Three days waiting and continually watching not having gained me any light, my disquiet increased, and other perplexities being added thereto, such as want and necessity, (which began to make me fear not only for myself, but for Rose, whom de Pesses had in vain laboured to make accept of some new succours) I formed the design of my journey to Ireland to awaken your tenderness and zeal. I communicated this resolution to George and my sister, who both approved of it. De Pesses who by his father's death was obliged to defer his departure for Germany,

resolved to begin his journey near the same time with me, under the hope of returning to Paris as soon as I, and to rejoin one another with happy news. An ample inheritance, of which he became master, augmented his confidence and zeal. He lent me an hundred pistoles, which I made no difficulty of receiving from a friend. Rose yet remained obstinate in refusing all his offers, as much from the fear of giving him any advantage over her, as the thoughts that she should be able to support herself till my return. In fine, I left Paris while de Pesses took the route of Germany.

You observe, added Patrick, that I concealed those circumstances from you upon my arrival at Coleraine; my reason was to spare your vexation, which would not have been lessened upon hearing my sister's lot; and, in relation to myself, it would have been then useless to communicate to you the enterprize of de Pesses, as it would be to-day, if I did not think myself obliged to make you enter into this consideration of my conduct. Alas! added he with a deep sigh, which this reflection wrung from him, what will he think of the inconstancy of my resolutions, and of the bottomless gulph into which I am precipitated! But if I have sacrificed to my family all the tenderness and bonds of my heart, I am not the more disengaged from the promise I have made my friend. I cannot grant to my lord Linch the consent he desires of marrying Rose; I shall not do it under the hazard of my life, even though she should approve of it; but less, without doubt, when the question is to do violence to a sister so dear. I admire that George, whose character I well know, could lend an ear to this proposal; and do not flatter yourselves, says he further, to make her lose the sentiments she has for her unknown. After discovering to me the secrets of her heart, she will remain constant. At length, he prayed me to begin by putting her in safety against any attempts of my lord Linch, who would hold her like one besieged; and if she could not prevail on herself, as he feared she would  
not,

not, to return to Ireland with me, that I would persuade her with all mildness to enter for a time into the best convent in Paris, until she had got a certain knowledge of her private affairs.

He told me also what he thought of George's situation; his affair was too fresh, he said, to hope that the court would so soon grant any sort of favour more than he had already received: But a time would come when all his offences would be effaced by oblivion; and many persons of consequence were persuaded, that, after the example of the Count de R——, he would one day step out of his chains, under the condition of leaving France, or remaining there under another name. You will not, said Patrick, be refused an entrance into his prison, and you will learn from himself at what time your solicitations will be necessary in support of those of his friends.

It was time to finish a conversation that might be prejudicial to his health; but when I spoke of my last adieu, in promising to spare the importunities of my lord Linch, stop, says he, with an air of softness, and as if he had set apart to this moment the care of his own interest, which other reflections had suspended, you must not go without hearing what I have to say to you on my part to the affair of de Pesses: You will see him sooner or later at Paris. What will you tell him, when he asks what detains me in Ireland, and why I am not in France as soon as he? What will you answer, if upon giving an account of his journey, he informs you, that he has discovered the retreat of madam de L——; and that he has brought me, perhaps, some new proof of her love and fidelity? How will you justify the fatal step in which you have engaged me! For the esteem which the world conceives of a man of honour ought to be accounted for every thing; and will he that knows in what bands I was bound, ever persuade himself that I could have broke them by any necessities more powerful than the engagements of honour and love? Seeing him enter

into these ideas, even to the shedding of tears, I forbore to enter into any new discussions. Forbear, said I, these false notions of your first engagements, and be persuaded that love and honour have imposed on you laws the most holy and inviolable. I shall easily convince de Pesses that you have taken side with your duty, and if he has made any discovery of your interests in Germany, he will rejoice to see you assured by ways the most honourable and short. I required from him in the end, that without giving himself further up to complaints as dishonourable as useless, he would suffer me to spend the remainder of the day in making preparations for my journey. My satisfaction, added I, would have been to have accompanied you to your estate ; but I leave you in the hands of a spouse, whose tenderness will leave no room for mine ; and pressed entirely down as I see you are by your fever, I think it a little dangerous, and shall part with you in quiet. If there remains in Rose any little docility for my advice, you shall not have cause to complain of our being too slow in rejoining you.

I sent for Sarah and Dilnick, who had taken care to order that we should not have any interruption. Having declared to them my resolution of beginning my journey on the morrow, we settled it by agreement, that Patrick should take the title of my Lord N——, which had for many ages belonged to the chief of our house. There was no danger to fear that George, who did not think of establishing himself in Ireland, should ever appear to dispute the title with him ; and I reckoned upon obtaining his approbation when I should arrive at Paris. I saluted Sarah by the name of his spouse ; and the pains I took to dispose favourably the mind of my lord Linch, having delivered Patrick from those importunities which he dreaded, I found myself at liberty after so many agitations to have nothing else to do than to think of my journey.



---

B O O K IV.

---

**A**LL the reflections I could make on the conduct and situation of Rose not being able to regulate my resolutions at such a distance from her, I thought of nothing but taking the nearest road, and of getting the start of all obstacles with which the approaches of a furious war seemed to threaten us on the road. My lord Linch, being firmly resolved to bear me company, represented, that in crossing England we should be stopped by a thousand impertinent questions, to which it would not be on every occasion easy to give an answer: Although the pretence of his voyages to France had hitherto been his education, yet he was now of such an age as would make that reason appear not very probable. It could not but give some mistrust to see a gentleman, on the eve of a war, quit his country to go over to the enemies of his master. It was this consideration that made him keep his arrival a secret, and he wished his departure might be no less so. As to myself, I could not make a noise of my journey without being laid under a necessity of imparting it to the government. If, nevertheless, we would avoid taking the common route, we must wait for opportunities that did not always present, and expose ourselves to delays not at all agreeable to our impatience. My lord Linch, following the advice of a few faithful friends, to whom he had discovered himself, proposed to me to travel to Waterford, a city in the south of Ireland, where we might hope to find some French vessel ready to sail,

and more probably as the rumour of a war had already made the merchants think of getting into their own ports. I submitted to these reasons, and (each of us attended by one servant) we left Dublin upon such uncertain informations. In reality we found at Waterford a vessel bound to Havre, but which not intending to sail in less than ten days, left us under greater perplexities than we had reasons to apprehend from passing through England. I was of opinion to return to Dublin, where our designs would be at least better concealed than in a country town. Yet my lord Linch's advice prevailed. His estate not lying very far from the place where we were, he pressed me to employ the time, that must necessarily be lost, to visit that hereditary treasure of which he did not doubt but Patrick had given me an account. It will be of service, added he, to our common interest, that you should have some knowledge of the situation and place where this wealth is deposited, as well to confirm the testimony I have given king James, as to facilitate the means of putting him in possession of it. I consented to the proposal, because the circumstances of my travelling with him laid me under a necessity of doing so; and I was also sensible of the confidence from whence this offer seemed to proceed. Linch looked upon himself as already united to my family, and did no longer distinguish our interests from his own. Nevertheless, I was watchful over my words, that nothing might slip from me which he might improve into an engagement. Without repenting of the prudent conduct which Patrick and I had agreed upon, I could not keep myself from a kind of terror, when I reflected on the agitations wherein I left him; and being yet more fearful in regard to Rose, I took a firm resolution not to charge myself with the consequences of her marriage, by contributing to it in any manner that might give her cause to reproach me.

We came to the principal mansion house of my lord Linch, and had precaution enough to arrive there at night, in order to keep our intentions concealed from

from the neighbourhood. He placed an intire confidence in the fidelity of his domestics, who were all of the Roman religion, and by long services linked in affection and zeal to his family. The same night we got into his chaise, and without other witness than a very aged footman, whom we made our guide, we reached a forest joining to his park, where the closeness of the trees obliged us to alight and go in on foot. A lanthorn served to shew us the path into this intricate labyrinth, of which Linch himself did not know the several turnings and windings, but by the help of a memorandum that he was obliged to consult every moment. At length we arrived at a very hollow and deep place, which the memorandum described with too much exactness to leave us under a possibility of mistaking it. I know whereabouts I am, said Linch, I came once before to this place with my father in my early youth; and indeed without further information we removed a covering of about two foot of earth, which concealed the passage into a vault. We lifted up a large stone laid over a hole, which by a gentle declivity led us to the bottom of this subterraneous cavern.

It had no other ornament about it than some thick planks, joined close to each other, to preserve from damp or moisture many great chests, wherein the treasure was shut up. Linch had the keys of them, and every one was distinguished by different marks. We opened the chests one after another, and I saw with admiration the spoils of more than an hundred once flourishing churches, the names of which were written upon every piece that belonged to them respectively. Care had been taken to join to every one of them a short account in writing, containing an evidence of the particulars and a number of circumstances, discovering the times and motives of depositing them there. The most part of the pieces were dishes, sconces, candlesticks, and crosses, all of silver, and divers kinds of vessels used in the celebration of the church ceremonies. An impulse of

reverence seizing me at the sight of these venerable monuments of the piety of our ancestors, made me give thanks to heaven upon my knees for their preservation. My lord Linch, who during this time had proceeded to visit some caskets on which he had been surpris'd to find the name of his family, all of a sudden set up a shout of joy upon opening a paper, the character of which he knew to be the handwriting of his father. It was address'd to himself. "In this box, my son, (said this worthy father) you will find all the jewels of your mother. Do not give them with your hand and heart to any but a woman worthy of wearing them after her.—Remember the relation I made you on my death-bed."

I am interest'd, said Linch after reading those few words, to clear up to you these obscurities. I lost my father when I was of tender years. He loved me not alone as I was his only son, but as I was the sole fruits of an excessive love, which he could not overcome, even after the death of my mother, notwithstanding some extraordinary reasons which he had to be comforted on this occasion. She was born without a fortune, but her merit, in his opinion, made amends for the want of riches. All the province applauded his choice, as he was the heir of a wealthy house, for having preferred her to a hundred ladies of fortune equal to his own. The splendour of an alliance so superior to their situation did not permit my mother's parents to consult on terms, nor her to listen to another inclination. So ambition and love linked them together with very different views, which nevertheless contributed to maintain both in the one and the other a conformity of sentiments in appearance, which should have been in reality better united. My father, who was always fond, could not but perceive that my mother's love was deficient in a certain ardour, which without intermission he endeavoured to re-inflame, out of an eager desire to have a more perfect possession of her affection; and my mother, intirely given up to ambition, for a long time

time made it her triumph to reign with an absolute sway over a heart, that in vain laboured to affect her's. Their greatest misfortune was, that not being insensible to love, she did not defend herself so well against the merit of a gentleman of the neighbourhood, who employed a share of his wealth in manifesting his passion by all the entertainments and gallantries that love could invent. These in truth were the things she loved; for virtue and honour being her first maxims, she knew how to guard herself against all the weaknesses of love. My father, whose passion left him no repose, did not nevertheless join to it the wretched torment of jealousy. He was for some months as much taken up in fortifying the heart of his spouse against the diligence and application of another, as in subduing it by his own. This was the natural method of disappointing the attempts of his rival in a conflict so uneasy; but a mortal fit of sickness, which reduced my mother in a few days to the extremest weakness, gave him to understand that he was destined to survive her. She desired to talk with him alone a few moments before her departure. I have remarked, said she, for some months past, that you have been cruelly tortured: Can you deceive yourself so much as to believe that I was more undisturbed and happy? Compare this day our sufferings, and you will confess that mine are the strongest, which are now about sending me to my grave. In these last moments, when justice and truth are the only duties that possess me, I am sensible that you are deceived if you would persuade yourself that I ever loved you. But if you have suspected me to have offended against the engagements of fidelity and honour; in a word, against any of the laws that a woman imposes on herself in the matrimonial ceremony, you will cruelly injure my memory. See what it costs me for having faithfully observed them.—I die.—She expired a few moments after. My father, continued Linch, did not behold in this confession any thing but an admirable example of constancy

and virtue. He upbraided himself for being ignorant of the means of touching a woman's heart, and of being deficient in the address of captivating them; seeing that his wife, having struggled so generously for her duty, was a plain proof that she had a relish for it, and that she would not have needed any other motive to make her find a pleasure therein, than to be aided by the study and diligence of a husband. These thoughts never forsook him during his whole life. They even helped to lessen the regrets and torments that poisoned the remainder of it; and in the end, approaching to his last hour, he gave me this account; with an exhortation, never to be disheartened by the indifferences of a virtuous wife.

It was at this time, added Linch, that he put into my hands the memorandum, of which we have just made use. As I was yet of tender years, he advised me to go and learn my exercises at Paris, and to wait there for more quiet times before I returned to my own country. Plunket, who was my nearest relation, was intrusted with the secret, and had a duplicate of the memorandum put into his hands, as a precaution against all sorts of accidents. Being young, and without any estate, he freely submitted to these last dispositions of my father, who directed him to follow the course of my fortune, and me upon all occasions to take care of his. It was by mutual consent we took the resolution of raising to ourselves a merit with king James, in discovering to him the wealth we could here procure him. But besides the difficulties of having it transported into France from the middle of Ireland, the unfortunate end of Plunket, and the continual trouble in which I have lived since his death, have put a stop to our design.

I have only, says my lord Linch further, a general notion of what is contained within these three caskets which belong to myself; my father only told me, that I should find in them the most precious of his wealth. We will leave here every thing that is troublesome in carriage; but this box, that will not incommode us  
much

much in our journey, you may conceive for whom I intend; and you must also observe, that in obstinately persevering to vanquish the rigours of the beautiful Rose, I do not act without authority or without example.

The beginning of his discourse made me foresee this conclusion. It appeared nevertheless demonstrable to me, that the last declaration of his father was on the contrary an instruction full of wisdom, by which his desires were to precaution him against an engagement so unfortunate as his own; and I thought I perceived, that he was under a necessity of doing a little violence to the expressions which he pretended to relate to me after his father, in order to wrest them to a sense advantageous for himself. But I knew that the blindness of his love was exactly composed of this unhappy obstinacy, which gave him room to explain every thing in his own favour; and this was not the time to combat Linch with such arguments as I could not make him relish. In reflecting upon what had passed, I did not discover any thing in the example of his father, which could inspire me with the least remorse for what I had done for Patrick; for I made a wide difference between marrying a woman against her consent, and consequently without hopes of being ever beloved, and a man's suffering himself to be persuaded to marry a woman, for whom in truth he has no love, but by whom he is sure to be tenderly beloved, and for whom he may consequently hope, that reason and gratitude may make him sooner or later conceive the most tender affection. The last of these two sorts of marriages may agree equally with religion and honour; and I cannot but persuade myself more and more that the other is an extravagant attempt, which searches for one's own satisfaction in the loss of that of another, and which even makes a man blind to the very thing that he thought a proper expedient to give him content; seeing that, granting him capable of loving, it is impossible for him to be a long time happy, in causing the unhappiness of what he loves.

In the mean time, the safety of Rose laying me always under a constraint, I made no answers but what contained only matters of compliment and civility, which engaged me to nothing ; and I did not at all oppose his design of presenting to her his mother's jewels. We did not leave the vault, till we had continued in it so long as to examine all the riches in it. With the church treasure, and the gold and silver vessels of Linch's house, we saw there about five hundred thousand franks, of divers sorts of coin, which had been secretly levied, for the aid of the king and church, at the time of the revolution. In going out of this obscure cave, Linch desired me to observe the places about it, as much as the darkness of the night would give me leave, that I might form an image of it, which he recommended to me to conserve faithfully in my memory. We went back to his castle, where our entertainment for many days rolled principally upon the means to convey the treasure to St Germain. I avoided speaking of Rose ; and if I was forced to hearken to the tedious repetitions of a lover, I limited myself in flattering his inquietudes, by a promise of assisting him with my sollicitations, which was the only engagement I could make him with sincerity.

The captain of the ship being in our secret, we by his directions and cunning avoided every thing that might discover us at Waterford. Our getting on shipboard was not less happy ; and after eight days sail we landed at Havre, from whence we immediately took post for Paris. Linch's impatience made him wish to alight directly at my sister's lodgings. He thought himself sure of vanquishing her by my aid, and looking upon himself already as my brother, he made no further difficulty of giving me the name. The fervency of his love disposed me in reality to serve him. I could not but own at the bottom, that his alliance was what I might look upon as a thing the most honourable and most advantageous for my sister. But with how many other cares was I turmoiled, and  
what



what precautions had I need of in all the obscurities which I was forthwith to unravel ! The most urgent desire I had was to begin by discoursing Rose, and to surprise her alone employed in her work, of which she had drawn me so moving a picture.

The benefit I drew from the haste of my lord Linch, was to be informed as speedily as he of the observations of three of his domestics, whom he had left planted about Rose's lodgings, and of the remarks of the woman, who lived during his absence in the chamber, of which he had pierced the wall. We alighted at the same place. He sent to his servants, to attend and receive his commands. The chambermaid imparted but few discoveries ; she only told us, that hearing my sister's voice, without having ever been able to distinguish her words, she remarked that she spoke seldom ; but as far as she could judge by her tone compared to another voice, she employed herself in reading several times a-day. The commission of the three domestics having been to watch abroad, their report was of more consequence. They assured us, that for about three weeks after their master went away they punctually saw a man without a livery, who went into her house twice a day, and who spent there each time near a quarter of an hour. How, cried my lord Linch in a transport of jealousy, did not you follow him the first time upon the track, and have you not forced him to declare to whom he belonged ? He confessed to us voluntarily, says one of the footmen, as soon as we questioned him. He said he was in the service of an Irish ecclesiastic called the dean of Coleraine. A new spur this, which mortally exasperated the jealousy of my lord Linch ; for it was evident that this was an artifice of some concealed lover, to whom my name served as a mask. I had some fear on me myself, although I laboured to appease the resentment of my lord Linch ; and I pressed his servants to make an end of their account. They added, that they had seen some coaches stop many times opposite to the door, but that those  
who

who were in them never alighted; and staying but a moment, they were not able to guess their names, nor get any account of their designs. That about the same number of persons went several times into the house, and that they durst not follow or question them upon such slight pretences. So that, after all, the principal subject of disquiet fell upon the afore-said punctual man, who never failed of shewing himself there twice a day.

My lord Linch, not at all recovering from his passion, proposed off-hand to put himself upon the watch in the street where my sister lived, and with a poniard in his hand to force him to confess his employer. I made him take up with more moderate thoughts, by representing, that the case of the person whom he judged worthy of his affections required more caution and address; that despair could give him no other counsel, if the question had been to torment a lover more happy than himself; but that not being able to deliver his mind from such suspicions without unjustly wounding my sister, he ought to leave to me the trouble of searching into the bottom of this mystery, in which I had as good a right to interest myself as he. Though I spoke to him after such a cool manner, yet possibly I was not myself intirely exempt from those suspicions, which I was endeavouring to banish out of his mind; but I wished to be the only person who should clear them up, and to bury the cause of them, if I should be so unfortunate as to find them true.

My reasons prevailed on Linch, and he gave me one of his servants to wait on me to my sister. As we walked some steps towards her lodging, this servant made me take notice of the messenger that caused his master's alarms, and who walked on the other side of the street without looking towards us. I resolved to question him, and reproach him for his artifice. But how great was my astonishment in discovering him to be the old valet de chambre of Mr de Pesses? He no sooner perceived me, than throwing him-  
self

self hastily in my way, he discovered great transport of joy at having once more seen me; and without waiting for my questioning, he informed me, that his master had left him in Paris when he went to Germany, with the commission only to watch without intermission over the safety of my sister; that not having lost sight of her, either while she was in the convent, or after she had left it, he regularly came to inquire after her health, and to offer her all he was capable of undertaking for her service; that having withdrawn herself, for reasons to which he was a stranger, into a chamber very ill furnished, where she wilfully determined not to be seen by any person whatsoever, he had with great difficulty obtained permission to see her; and he confessed to me, that in order to deceive her, after many fruitless trials, he got admission to her under the name of one of my domestics; that she had pardoned him this stratagem, and having only requested the liberty of seeing her under the same name, she permitted him to come twice a day to receive her orders; that having seen her that day before noon, she informed him, that she was quite out of expectation to see me: that she had herself ordered him to go to the post-office to inquire for letters from me, that if I was ignorant of the situation to which she was reduced, I should be under a great surprise to find her such as I was going to see; and as to himself, who knew what a high veneration his master had for her, if he came to be informed of her condition, he would for ever grieve at an adventure of which he could not comprehend the meaning. This honest man discovered real marks of a tender compassion, by shedding some tears. I embraced him with thanks, and without thinking of my lord Linch's lacquey, I entered into the house where Rose lodged, of which he had before shewn me the door.

If my heart was tossed with some passions, they proceeded less from grief and fear than from the dawns of a secret joy, which nevertheless was mode-

moderated by some remains of doubt, that could not yet be explained. I would already have wagered all my blood, that my dear Rose was not guilty of any thing ; but my wishes for her innocence were too ardent not to be accompanied with some little distrust. I went in with these reflections, which gave me perhaps a troubled air, and my figure of itself was capable of raising some surprise. The host, of whom I demanded if I might see madam de ———, answered me roughly, that she saw no body ; and hearing me reply that I must absolutely see her, he raised his voice, and advised me to be gone out of the door instantly, if I had not a mind to be turned out by the shoulders. His brutality did not at all displease me. He was a rude clownish fellow, who having all his life followed some mechanic trade, had now retired to a little house of his own, to enjoy in it a very middling fortune. The noise he made was heard by de Pesses's valet, who out of respect remained on the outside of the door. Being known, he readily advanced, and calling me by the name of his master, to support the title he had hitherto borne, he delivered me from a perplexity, which I presently saw I should not have soon got out of without him. This explanation of the servant made the host so tractable, that asking me whether I was the dean of Coleraine, and afterwards overwhelming me with civilities, he gave me occasion to dive into the bottom of the motives that made him at first so crabbed. I asked him several questions, which he had no occasion to be pressed to answer. My sister's chambermaid (said he) was her friend ; she came to enquire for a lodging for her mistress, under pretence that she had a mind to pass some time in retirement, and they had not many words about the terms. This miserable wretch did not tell me, that, independent of other advantages which he found in having them for lodgers, the sole profit he drew from their labour amounted to ten times more than their expences. During the first days of their retirement, continued he heavily,  
many

many persons came here, who imagined they had need of no more than to tell their names to gain an entrance to madam ———; but when I observed, that she would not be seen, and that she disdained to receive either their money or their letters, I absolutely guarded her door against all unknown comers. This man, added he, pointing to Mr de Pesses's valet, who came here from you, and whom she herself admitted, can bear me witness, if he ever has seen any one about her chamber. Even Mr what-do-you-call-him your friend, whose name I do not yet know, has not hitherto found the way to her chamber, nor has he yet asked me for admittance, although he has a better right to it than others. What friend? interrupted I; of whom do you speak? I first thought he meant George, to whom that liberty might have been given. But his answer out of hand raised in me other suspicions. It is the man, said he, who came here about three weeks ago, and who forced me to take a man cook by your orders. He charged me not to let madam ——— know any thing of the matter till your arrival; and, to hinder her from suspecting it, he ordered her to be entertained rather with neatness and nicety than with magnificence. She had forbidden me, added he, from receiving other dishes of meat that were sent here every day from some person unknown; but I thought that some time or other she would not be displeased to have received presents from her friends, and that reason made me accept of a very decent set of linnen, and other conveniences for the use of her table and bed. But, added he, you ought to know the name of the man of whom I am speaking, since it was not done but in pursuance of your orders.

I did not think proper to open myself to a man of his temper, and desiring only to have the cook called, I asked him the name of the master who employed him. I do not indeed know, says he; he found me at a cook's who keeps on ordinary, where I was in service, and having brought me here, he has not failed

failed these three days past to furnish me with money sufficient for the charges. Very well, answered I, in an ambiguous tone, the secret is well kept. He took these words for a mark of a good understanding with him, and of my approbation. I left him; and being shewed the way to the chamber by Mr de Pesses's valet, I went directly to Rose's door.

The noise of a bolt, that opened the door, made me observe that she was sufficiently upon her guard. It was about the hour when the chambermaid used to admit Mr de Pesses's valet. She was surprised to see an ecclesiastic extremely mishapen and deformed, of whom she had no knowledge; but having heard her mistress perpetually speaking of me, she did not doubt but I was her brother; and returning to her, without thinking to ask me to come in, or to make me an answer, I heard her say to her mistress in a transport of joy: Ah! madam, this can be no-body else but Mr Dean. I followed a-crofs an anti-chamber, so narrow that it did not deserve that name. The chamber, which I surveyed also with one cast of my eye, rather resembled a prison than the apartment of a lady of Rose's rank, and did appear not otherwise neat than by the care of those who lived in it. But all my looks immediately centered on my dear sister, whom the news of so unexpected an arrival had made her drop the work out of her hands. Motionless with joy and surprise, she had not the power to rise from her chair. She looked on me with a languishing eye, from whence I immediately saw burst a torrent of tears. For my part I thought less of speaking to her, than of considering the humble state to which I saw her reduced. She was clothed in woollen stuff; her hair, the most beautiful in the world, was neither powdered nor curled; a white cloath apron covered all the fore part of her body, and put her in the same appearance as the servant who was about her, and dressed in the like manner. If the hatred of the world, and the contempt of vain ornaments, had induced her to this abasement, I

should

should have cast myself at her feet, to do her all the honours due to an evangelical perfection. About her I saw the materials of her labour, linnen cloth, thread, needles, some pieces of work begun, and others finished ; in fine, all the implements of a woman that gets her living by her labour. I could no longer resist this sight.

Oh ! my dear Rose ! Oh ! my well-beloved sister ! cried I, without husbanding my expressions before her chamber-maid, what do I not owe to heaven for granting me so much favour as to find you in the exercise of honour and virtue ! I am not ignorant of your troubles ; I have received your letter, and you see with what eagerness I have brought you all the aids of my love. Do not blush at all at your situation, added I, (seeing her continue in tears) adversity does not make merit lose its name ; it serves only as a foil to virtue : If you are such as these outsidess pronounce you ! these are more honourable than exterior pride, which may deck out vice, but cannot embellish it.

She at length opened her mouth, to thank me for the generosity and diligence of my cares. In wiping away her tears, I observed she kept her eyes down ; whether it were that she had not yet obtained a sufficient degree of confidence from the testimony of her heart, or whether the impression of the condition in which I found her was yet too powerful, I thought I discovered in her countenance something of melancholy and perplexity. This was not the time to penetrate further into it by indiscreet questions. I proposed to her to quit her lodgings immediately, and to suffer me to re-conduct her to the convent. She rejected this offer, and I was satisfied with her reasons. After the harshness with which the abbess had treated her, I could not desire her to return to such an odious place, which she had been obliged to leave in so much haste, that she was under a necessity of selling her cloaths to satisfy the avarice of the house, which was the ruling passion in it. Nevertheless,

vertheless, her refusal threw me into some perplexity. Not having time to take other measures, I was obliged to send Mr de Pesses's valet to the convent of ———, with an order to gain admission into it the same day at any rate.

She was so amazed at my haste, that lifting up her eyes with astonishment, she asked me why I did not put off till to-morrow a matter that could be more easily executed with a little delay. After this manner she forced me to discover to her one part of the thing which I had reserved for a more settled conversation: You know, said I, only half the danger you are in. The relation you made me in your letter does not come up to half what I have discovered by other means. Fancy to yourself, that your ruin is conspired on every side, and that for many weeks past not a single motion has been made about you that did not threaten it. The neighbouring houses are filled with people who watch you; your lodging is not more secure. Do you think that you have in it a man-cook placed by a stranger; that all that is provided for your table comes from the generosity of some unknown lover; that the linnen and all the conveniences of which you have the use, are furnished you besides by mysterious ways that I have not been yet able to penetrate? I looked on her in speaking this, to observe in her eyes the impression which these last circumstances might make in them. Not observing in them any kind of trouble that might help to confirm my distrust, arise, said I (with the sole design of hastening her departure) come and be convinced by your own experience, that your very chamber, which you think so well fortified with bolts, is far from being an impenetrable sanctuary, and that you are environed by enemies who are not separated from you but by the ordinary thickness of a wall. I then led her by the hand to the wall, which was the partition betwixt her chamber and the next house; and thrusting with the end of my cane in several places, to discover



ver that which my lord Linch spoke of, I distinguished plainly the gap, and that there scarce remained the thickness of two fingers to pierce. An impulse of indignation, that I could not contain, made me give it a kick with my foot strong enough to beat it down. The hangings, that were nothing but a slight painted linnen, having made no resistance, any more than a table placed on the other side to conceal the havock made by Linch, we were not less surprised to find ourselves on a level with the floor of his apartment, than to see Linch himself in an elbow chair, from whence he easily perceived us.

He instantly ran towards us with a shout of admiration and joy. His motion and cry threw my sister into such a fright, that I saw her ready to fall down in a swoon. Linch, thinking himself authorised to pass through the breach to offer his assistance to my sister, and seeing her come to herself, threw himself at her knees with the senseless transports of a lover. He thanked fortune, and complained of it in the same breath. He accused Rose, he accused himself; he justified himself, and her also. He overwhelmed her with flatteries, complaints, reproaches, protestations, and oaths of an inviolable love for ever: In fine, for a quarter of an hour, in which he did not stop one moment, he said a thousand things which I had no small difficulty to understand, which perhaps he did not understand himself, and which assuredly Rose gave no ear to. I took the opportunity of interrupting him, to represent more forcibly than I had done in Dublin, the temerity and indecency of his enterprise; but not having yet any reason to take from him all hopes, I immediately turned towards my sister, to whom at the same time I represented this madness itself as the testimony of a lively passion. My lord loves you tenderly, says I; he has united to his birth a great share of merit and riches; what should hinder you from accepting of his offers? This discourse was sincere; but Rose, being delivered up to her sorrow, which had another

Source,

source, released herself from our importunities by a short answer. What circumstances of time are these, says she, for proposals that require a tranquillity of heart and mind? Mr de Pesses's valet, who came in that moment to give me an account of his commission, completed her relief. He whispered in my ear, that the convent would be open as soon as she appeared there. I could not conceal this resolution from my lord Linch. He was less dashed with my censures, than rejoiced and consoled by the open approbation I had given to his love, and even by the answer of Rose, which he did not fail to interpret in his own favour. In this disposition I expected nothing from him but his help and zeal to procure my sister a more honourable retreat. I requested his coach, and proposed to him to join with me in conducting Rose to the convent. We left de Pesses's valet to take care of such things as she did not remove with her, and making her put on a more decent dress, we conducted her straight to the convent.

I was relieved only from one part of my inquietude ; but that indeed was the most urgent. Far from shewing either discontent or dissidence, Linch appeared to be charmed with what fortune and my pains had done for him that happy day. He did not cease admiring the fortitude my sister had need of, to maintain so glorious a proof of her virtue ; and in representing without intermission the condition from whence we had taken her, he protested to me that he had found more charms in her amiable and careless undress, than in all the finery and ornaments that go along with fortune. He asked my leave to carry her the next day all his mother's jewels, and to see her sometimes at the grate. I did not refuse him this request but conjuring him, even by the longings I had to be of service to him, to leave to me the conduct of his hopes and mine, I obtained from him in my turn, that he should regulate his impatient desires by my counsels. Our abode being in the same house, we shall now be at ease, said I to him, to communicate to each other our notions and resolutions.

In truth, my only view in lodging with him was to penetrate more easily into his designs. I apprehended the worst from a mind so enterprising; and if Rose should one day become his, I was resolved it should at least be by such means as should make her find as much honour as advantage in the alliance. He delayed me from going to see George, and to know of himself how he could consent to the project of running away with his sister. I could not impeach Linch of having imposed on me in his relation; neither could I suspect George for having lightly consented to sacrifice the honour and repose of his sister. These doubts could not be cleared up but at the Bastile. I hastened to go there before the close of the day, and promising Linch to be with him at supper, I left him under some other pretence.

George did not expect my visit. I knew him too well not to perceive that it gave him a piercing emotion; nevertheless, by a false affectation of resolution and firmness, which I did not pretend to take notice of, he received me with an air the most free and disengaged in the world; and when I began to speak, by lamenting him, and declaring the share I took in his misfortunes, he answered with a smile, that he could not give that name to the consequences of an affair of honour, which had turned out so gloriously for his brother and him. My business was not to combat these miserable prepossessions. I agree, said I, that an accident from which you could not defend yourselves, ought to appear excusable in the eyes of the public; but it is no less true, that it has been the occasion of shutting you up in the Bastile, and that it will be a long time an invincible obstacle to your fortune. I do not speak a word of Patrick, who has just espoused the only daughter of Fincer.—He interrupted me with surprise to demand an explanation of this piece of news. I gave it to him in a few words. Yes, replied I, the favour of heaven has procured him in the space of some months an establishment that leaves him nothing to desire. But what shall

shall we do with your sister, whose lot you may well imagine is not very happy? I proceeded no farther; and being well satisfied that he had given me time to draw him a picture in miniature of the situation of our family, I thought, that in giving him liberty to speak, he would of himself come to the point of declaring his true sentiments. I waited then his answer in silence, whilst he appeared to discharge himself from a thousand melancholy reflections, of which all his efforts to disguise them from me did not hinder me in the least from reading a part of them in his countenance.

At length, casting his eyes upon me, I congratulate Patrick, (said he, in a constrained voice) for having pleased the daughter of Fincer, and I believe his fortune is better established with her than if he had been successful in his first pursuits. As to Rose, continued he, I do not know whether you have seen my lord Linch, and if he has spoke to you of the inclination he has for her. In putting me to this question, I observed that he endeavoured to discover my thoughts in my eyes. I have seen him, said I carelessly, and added nothing that could give him any light. He perceived plainly from himself, that half of my knowledge was concealed at the bottom of my heart. If you have seen him, replied he in a more settled tone, he has communicated to you his design; and since you make a difficulty of telling me of it, I conclude that you do not approve of it. He has discovered it to me, continued he, and I should have rejected it with indignation, if two motives of equal weight had not obliged me to give my consent. Linch did not come to propose it to me, until after I had been advertised by an unknown person of the deplorable extremity to which my sister was reduced, and of her rejecting all assistances that were offered her. I confess, that being myself out of a condition to aid her, ignorant even of the place of her retirement, knowing Patrick to be in Ireland, and doubting that from an income so moderate as yours, sufficient could never be drawn to repair our losses, I thought all sorts of means lawful for

for saving the unfortunate Rose and the honour of our family. Yet Linch ought to have told you under what conditions I came into his measures. I insisted that he should obtain your's and Patrick's consent. I exacted from him, that he should undertake a voyage to Ireland to request it. I refused to unfold myself clearly in a billet which he got from me. In one word, I played the tyrant ; and the consent itself, that I gave him out of necessity, has cost me some tears. But this motive, that alone is sufficient to clear me in the eyes of men of honour, was extremely fortified by the reflections I made on a billet that chance here threw into my hands. I found it in a book that Patrick sent me to dissipate the griefs of a tedious imprisonment. It was a note from de Pesses, who gave him fervent thanks for the price with which he promised to reward his services, who engaged that with this spur, added to that of friendship, he was capable to undertake any thing. The nature of the service and of the recompence was so clearly expressed in the letter, that I could not be deceived in it. Your departure and my captivity seemed to give Patrick an absolute empire over Rose. I had no doubt but his design was to make it subservient to his own happiness, and in the disorder of our affairs I possibly might not have condemned an agreement which seemed to promise the establishment of those two. I mentioned it to Patrick, without confessing to him how I came to be informed of his project ; and I made no other objection to it than the repugnance of Rose, which appeared to me to be difficult to overcome ; but if her ill fortune should condemn her to do any violence to her inclinations, I had then no scruple in wishing that it might be in favour of my lord Linch. Supposing an equality in other respects, his birth and riches would give him so great an advantage over his rival, that my sister could not fail of seeing the difference, and in spite of all her coldness, which Linch himself has confessed to me, this at least would be one reason for consoling her under the necessity of

being his. And do you reckon for nothing, added George, the obligation I laboured under of making a prudent use of Linch? Could not he in spite of my resistance execute what he was willing should depend on my consent? I confess his generosity was another motive that touched me. A man capable of surmounting his desires on the eve of an enterprize, that gave him assurance of the possession of what he loved, appeared to me worthy of my sister, and to be a person who would one day or other make her happy. The disgusts that arise from caprice or constitution will sooner or later give way to reason; and the heart of Rose not being prepossessed by any other inclination, I did not doubt but after she had married Linch she would soon find a pleasure in her duty.

The pains George took in justifying himself gave me at least to understand that he yet made some account of my esteem. I found a probability in his excuses, and not willing to mix any thing with them that might embroil such favourable beginnings, I continued to discourse of the services I was resolved to render to Linch, and of the situation of his own affairs. He could not at all see any other method for procuring his liberty than by those ways which Patrick had given me an account of in Dublin. This was to flatter a hope very uncertain and far removed; but his friends not ceasing to employ their interests for him, at least did not look upon him as a man entirely abandoned. The duke of ———, whether from an affection to his person and name, or from an impulse of passion, which he always preserved for Rose, had never slackened his zeal. King James himself had made very warm solicitations in his favour to the court, who had so fully explained themselves as to make one understand that it would not be for ever inflexible.

I retired more satisfied with my visit than I durst hope for, and upon the whole exceedingly pleased to have avoided in our first interview all discussions that might revive our late contests. I had other projects

jects upon George ; but all my present zeal having relation to my sister, I was in haste to see her, in order to obtain from her mouth those lights which I had a mind to turn to her own benefit. It was too late to return to the convent : so turning over that consideration to the morning, I thought of nothing but to rejoin Linch, whom I judged to be under an impatience to see me again.

His impatience was indeed extreme, but I could not as yet imagine the cause ; he met me with all the transports of fury, and perhaps I was indebted only to my profession for the little respect he as yet observed upon my arrival. His eyes sparkled, and amidst the confusion of a thousand reproaches, with which he loaded me all in a breath, he could not find terms to express himself in. I pitied his trouble, and not having yet any mistrust of the share I had in it, I approached, and inquired what it was that disquieted him. He pushed me from him roughly. Traitor ! said he, your habit protects you from my resentment ; but I shall have the satisfaction of publishing to the world your baseness and perfidy. The surprise into which this outrage threw me would at once have made him open his eyes upon his injustice, if he had been capable of one moments reflection ; but continuing to treat me with the utmost passion, it was a long time, and after a great many interrupted and broken words, 'ere I came to understand him. In returning from Rose's convent he had been informed by the lacquey whom he had charged to wait on me, and before whom I had talked without any precaution with de Pesses's valet, that I had shewed greater complaisance and condescension for de Pesses than for him. The tender and familiar manner in which I had inquired after news of his old friend, and the gratitude I shewed for his zeal, passed in Linch's mind for a preference given to his rival. He knew nothing of de Pesses but his name ; but, during the former acquaintance he had with George, he was not ignorant of our first project for the establishment of

my sister. He knew also that de Pesses had had the authority of my consent ; and, joining all those ideas to the relation of his lacquey and the testimony of his own eyes, he was persuaded that my intention was to deceive him. He explained all the rest of my conduct according to this prepossession. The civilities I paid him in Dublin, the hopes I had given him on our journey, even the heat with which I had espoused his interest at Paris, passed with him for so many artifices by which I endeavoured to traverse his designs, and to watch a safe opportunity of putting Rose out of his reach. In a temper as impetuous as his, jealousy and shame were converted into rage. He spoke of nothing but revenge, and de Pesses was to be his first victim.

Nevertheless, the good humour with which I laboured to appease him, and the oaths that accompanied my protestations of integrity, began to make some impression on him ; but having proposed to me to engage my word that de Pesses should be absolutely sacrificed to him, my answer rekindled all his fury. It would be injustice, said I, to dispose of Rose's heart without giving her some knowledge of this treaty: What I promise you without restriction, added I, is to approve her choice in case she declares for you, and to continue, as I have to this present time, to serve you with fidelity. He thought he saw, in the turn of these words, a new dissimulation, which revived all his transports. It was in this violent passion that being no longer master of his own secret, he declared to me with a contemptuous air, that he would one day or other make me repent my having betrayed him, and that the measures he had taken were less likely to deceive him than me. This menace made less impression on me than his obstinacy in shutting himself up in an adjoining chamber, of which all my intreaties could not prevail upon him to open the door. I continued some time employing my civilities and prayers. At length piqued in my turn with a proceeding so brutal, I chole to retire.

His



His threats, that did not at first more astonish me; than the other circumstances of a scene so vexatious, restored me immediately to my wits, and shewed me things in other colours. What should I understand of those measures, upon which he built more than upon me? Had I not every thing to fear from a man so violent? And he who had been capable of laying a scheme for running away with my sister, is he not after all equally capable of renewing his project, which he has never yet renounced; unless he reckons to succeed by some other way? Without doubt he did not deceive himself, when he accused me of having managed his passions, with an intent to give myself time for conveying Rose out of the way of his enterprizes; but could he think, that by making with him the voyage to France, I ought to put her into his hands against her will; or, perhaps, join myself to him in any other manner to countenance his violences? When his jealousy had power to alarm him only from the consideration that I imprudently shewed for de Pesses, ought he not to be satisfied with my explanations, and think me sincere, at least when I made every thing depend on the choice of my sister? Is this the man of honour, said I, who would be indebted for his interest in the heart of a woman to force and violence? Besides, what a humour! what brutality! what fantasticalness! shall I force a young lady of such a sweet disposition as Rose to accept of such a hasty and passionate husband? He will run away with her: But what have I to fear? Cannot I defeat all his schemes yet better, by sending her immediately to Ireland, where her brother is in a condition to protect her? He shall see her no more, added I, I will to-morrow begin my journey with her to Coleraine.

This resolution, to which I imagined myself fixed in a manner not to be shaken, made me think, at my awaking, on the preparations for our departure. But I was informed for the first news, that Lynch, more early than I, had left the lodgings at the dawn of day, and that he had removed all his equipage with

him. Although my sister's retreat did not appear to me to be in the least exposed to his insults, yet I abandoned all other thoughts to go immediately to it. He might propose to himself to see her before me, and to inspire her with some ideas that might make her resist the execution of mine. Besides, this precipitate step confirming all my suspicions, I did not think I could remove too soon from Paris, and I would willingly prepare Rose to take post with me the same day.

It was about nine o'clock in the morning I got to the convent, with my mind full of the new journey I was going to undertake; for being fixed in this design, it imported me so little to penetrate further into the affairs of Rose, that I resolved not to take up my time with them. She came to the grate. I found in her an air of satisfaction, which she did not discover the evening before. Without losing time with unprofitable questions, I said to her, that having perceived she had no relish for my lord Linch, and a thousand reasons making me apprehend that she was not in a state of security at Paris, so much as to refuse marrying him, I was determined to conduct her into Ireland, where she might spend the most agreeable life with Patrick. A change in her countenance made me all at once judge that this proposal perplexed her. Nevertheless, not daring to oppose me to my face, she took occasion from the name of Patrick to reproach me with not having yet informed her of any of his affairs. It was true, that for the little time I passed with her the day before, and from the unexpected appearance of Linch, I did not mention any thing of her brother. I told her now in haste, that I had left him under an extreme desire to see her again, and that she would find him happily married to the daughter of Fincer. Upon this occasion Rose could not dissemble her thoughts. She looked on me with a lively emotion, married! said she, do not you deceive me! I recounted to her some circumstances, which left her no further room to doubt of it; but what I thought would have inspired her with joy  
raised

raised in her a piercing grief, of which she had not power to conceal the tokens. — Alas ! said she, see then upon what foundation we are to build the oaths of men ! No, added she, I could not have believed Patrick capable of such a perfidy.

So sharp an indignation, excited by the concern of another, gave me to understand what Rose's delicacy was for her own. I recalled to my mind the engagements that Patrick had entered into with madam de L—— ; but an acquaintance with that lady for a few moments not being able to beget a friendship so strong as to raise the trouble in which I saw her, made me conclude, that what appeared a testimony of compassion for the sake of another, was an inquietude that escaped her for her own. My curiosity made me forget, that I ought not to hold discourse on any thing but our journey. Ah ! said I, why do you condemn Patrick for having surrendered himself to the offers of an amiable woman, at the instances of his friends, and even out of consideration of the necessity of our affairs, which made for him a law in a matter that ought to have been sued for with the utmost application ? You, who reproach him for it, do you know that you have contributed more than all mankind to the virtuous efforts he has made upon himself ; and that I should not be here now with the aids I have brought you, if his tenderness for you had not made him take this only step for your relief ? What say you ? interrupted she with a new agitation. Ah ! I see he is made unhappy. I know it. It is impossible that with a passion, such as he felt at his departure, he could have power to renounce voluntarily the inclinations of his heart. What cause have I to grieve ! He will reproach me one day or other with his misfortunes ; and is it not me alone he ought to accuse for them ?

The heat with which she expressed herself raised in me an astonishment that I had some difficulty to remove. I did not think her capable of such a transport. All her notions intirely disagreed with mine.

I stopped her with a steady and severe look. How then, says I, with a tone as severe, has the spirit of error and corruption laid hold of all my family? What can these senseless maxims mean, that represent a trifling passion as an invincible obstacle, and misfortune and woe as inseparable from virtue? Is this you, Rose, who have suffered yourself to be seduced by such horrible principles? Is this the progress you have made in the paths of religion since you have been removed from under my eyes? She appeared to be more afflicted than humbled with this reproach. Ah! my brother, said she gently, can you never come to conceive what it costs a tender heart to be reduced to the necessity of combating its most darling inclinations? No, replied I hastily; but you who appear to know it, in what school have you learned it? This question stopped her mouth. I pitied her embarrassment, and not hoping that she would behave herself to me as the confident of the secrets of her heart, I had taken up the resolution. I came in, not to press her to a discovery before our departure, if chance had not thrown an opportunity in my way that I was not in quest of. They put a letter into her hands in my presence, and told her the messenger waited for an answer. Her blushes betrayed her. She seemed to hesitate what order to give the porter. Her silence did not end here. At length I freed her from so cruel a perplexity, by going to the boy and telling him, that he should wait at the parlour door.

This was only stepping out of one trouble to fall into another, or, as they say, out of the frying-pan into the fire. Her confusion appearing to increase when she found herself alone with me, I had not the cruelty to spin out this scene to any length. I assumed a more mild air, to encourage her. I observe, said I, with joy, my dear Rose, that your heart is not yet become acquainted with artifice. But would you be so disconcerted, if you had nothing to reproach yourself with? Ah! no, interrupted she; heaven,  
who

who is the witness of all my thoughts, knows that I have committed no offence. Let us take off the mask, replied I: Patrick, who knew the tenderness of my affection, did not judge, that when I was about making this voyage to France, I should remain in ignorance of what you confided to him. I learned from his mouth all that passed before he left you. Has nothing happened since that time which you are ashamed to communicate to me? This doubt, which I raised on purpose to quicken her, had all the effect I expected from it. If Patrick, replied she in haste, has given you a faithful account, you have heard nothing that might give me any cause of shame, and I have taken good care since not to deserve this reproach. But I confess, added she blushing again, that I could not defend myself from having some esteem for a man, who appears to me worthy of such sentiments. Read the letter, continued she (taking it out of her pocket) that I received yesterday from him; I will make no more difficulty of putting that into your hands which I just received, and I desire that you yourself may open it; but you will not suspect me of the least dissimulation, when I commission you to begin with the first. To receive letters, muttered I in taking them, to read them, to keep them so carefully; this is already making large strides. I immediately began with this curious piece. He prayed her to judge of the pain of so long a silence by the power of a passion that never yet had an example: That he had exactly observed all he had undertaken, not to trouble her with his letters, at a time when the resolution she had taken of seeing no person, had made him fear to injure any decorum, or to alarm her prudence; but being incapable also of dropping his views for a moment, he confessed that he had not passed one day without informing himself of every thing that related to her health and repose; and that to make her retreat more secure and quiet, he had taken with her host such measures as appeared to have happily succeeded. See here,

without doubt, interrupted I, the friend, the cook, and all those things which I easily persuade myself you were utterly ignorant of. But let us read on; added I, perceiving she was discomposed by this remark.—Understanding (he said) that her brother was come to Paris, and engaged her to return to a convent, he easily imagined that the confusion and disorder of our fortune might have had a share in this resolution; and that from henceforward her brother being with her, his presence would give a check to all evil interpretations, and therefore he prayed her to engage him to take that house, which he had out of season proposed to her at another time, when he confessed her prudence had made her refuse the offer. He promised we should live in great abundance of every thing becoming people of distinction, and that the hand from whence this liberality came should never be discovered to the public. In fine, he requested two words of an answer, which should be followed the same moment by an execution of his offers.

I cannot deny, said I to Rose, but that this is the procedure of a gallant man, and of a liberal and respectful lover. Did you not cultivate, (continued I,) a further acquaintance with him since the departure of Patrick? No, said she; without making any answer to his letters, I ordered him to be told many a time by those who brought them, that I could not with honour suffer such applications from a person unknown; and my only hope to discover thereby his name, was what made me open them. He pressed me to consent to his visits: I might have had power thereby to have drawn the secret from himself, or dextrously from his servants; but the laws I had imposed on myself have always made me forbear.

I confess, an adventure so strange caused me no less astonishment than inquietude; I was perplexed myself to give her those advices which she appeared to stand in need of. I thought one moment to break off our conversation, and roughly to make use of my  
authority

authority to oblige her immediately to take the road to Ireland. But I began to be afraid, with good reason, that I should meet with resistance from her. Besides, I did not dissemble it, that whether it were from an impulse of natural tenderness, that made me with her heart satisfied, or from the idea which his inclination and esteem made me form of this unknown lover, I found myself so very well disposed for him, that I had a desire at least to see him, and dive into the truth of his sentiments. In fine, not daring to amuse myself without receiving new lights, I demanded it as a favour from my sister, to relate to me all the progress of this intrigue, from the very beginning. I acknowledge, says I, that when decency and a reasonable regard to interest agree with the inclination of the heart, a bias of this nature may merit some indulgence; but it is not you that ought to believe in this manner. We are too easily blinded with our own appetites. If you know me to have a love and tenderness for my family, and discretion and zeal for your true interests, do not in the least fear to repeat to me that which you have discovered to Patrick, and leave me to judge without prepossession of those things which your's may make you dissemble.

She began her history from our first differences. I found even in the lesser details that air of sincerity, which artifice does not know how to counterfeit. The birth of her inclination, the duration and progress of it, her aversion for the duke of ———, her indifference for Mr de Pesses, her disgust for my lord Linch; she explained all these with the same candour. I stopped her sometimes to question her upon some obscure and important circumstances, which she appeared not to have fully represented. She satisfied me off-hand by an ingenuous and plain answer. Happy temper! said I to myself; what would be the crime of him who should ravish a heart so innocent from virtue! In fine, when she came to Patrick's journey, and the subject of her letter to me which she

she was willing to pass over, I asked her, if she knew nothing of the contest of her brother with an emissary of her unknown lover, and what she thought of that adventure. You call to my memory, replied she, one of the most melancholy circumstances of my life. I was not informed of this accident till many days after the departure of my brother. The unknown (seeing you have given him this name) let all this interval pass over without renewing his ordinary diligence. I cannot indeed tell you, that I was insensible of this appearance of coldness or forgetfulness; but I was distracted with an inquietude yet more cruel. After the confidence I had reposed in Patrick, I fancied he had concealed his resentment from me with some precaution, and had learned enough to carry him to some violent resolutions, of which the silence of the unknown might be the effect. I was a long time in a state of uncertainty and trembling under these notions, until I received from him a letter, in which he gave me a plain account of what had become of mine. The same reason, said he, that had not yet permitted him to open himself upon that occasion to me, had hindered him from courting Patrick's acquaintance, in spite of the inclination he felt to love him. The same inclination had forced him also to retain his sentiments closed up in his breast for so long a time, that he might fear in the end to betray them by some indiscretion; that I need not but be perfectly secure in their innocence, added he, when he made me a free confession of this nature. This nevertheless, was the cause that made me absolutely refuse not to give him an answer. I had a difficulty to conceive, how he could neglect so favourable an opportunity of making my brother approve his love; and I drew but an ill omen from all these mysterious reasons, that did not dare to let him place his confidence in a man of honour. In the mean time, added Rose, but with a voice less resolute, and her eyes cast down, his constancy, his disinterestedness, the continual renewal  
of



of his oaths and complaints, my weakness, if you will have it so, made other ideas insensibly spring up in me.

The extreme attention with which I hearkened unto her, made me take notice of a change in her countenance; and seeing she continued to hesitate, I did not doubt but she was on the verge of opening some circumstance which her confession had made irksome to her. Your confidence charms me, said I to her immediately, to give her courage; continue, my dear Rose, do not disguise any thing. Alas! replied she, ought I to confess it to you? And what will you think of my conduct, if you do me justice enough at least to confide in my sentiments?—When the cruelty of the abbess, (which, that I may discover all my suspicions to you, I do not attribute to her) as well as the secret practices and as mischievous views of the duke of —, had forced me to think of the miserable sanctuary in which you have found me; in the midst of my troubles, and in the bitterness of my heart, I could not refuse myself the consolation of letting this unknown into some part of my design, of which I do not yet know what judgment you will make. I had received one of his letters, in which he renewed the declarations of his love in the most passionate terms. I took up the pen trembling, and following the dictates of my heart, I wrote to him what urgent reasons had obliged me to a change of situation, until the return of my brother; and that I thought his attachments to me intitled him to this intimation, to spare him the pains of unprofitable inquiries; that being resolved, during this interval, not to bear either the sight or letters of any person whatsoever, he ought to expect that I should yet be more inflexible to him; that nevertheless I gave him leave to explain this distinction to his advantage; that I did not forbid him to inform himself privately of the conduct I was going to observe, because I should be well pleased to preserve his esteem; that if (being such as he laboured to persuade me) he would

would sooner or later discover himself to my brothers, he should then find my heart to declare for him; but that after this confession (to which I would freely add the promise he demanded of me so earnestly, not to engage myself to any other person) he ought to build as much upon my fidelity as I had done upon his, and contain himself within those limits that should serve as a rule for the duration of my sentiments.—I know not, continued she with a fearful look, if you will not condemn this letter. I quitted the convent a quarter of an hour after I wrote it. He observed so punctually my commands, that I sometimes doubted, if he continued to love me, or if he had discovered my retreat. But his letter which I received yesterday the moment we parted will convince you that he is always the same; and I have no difficulty in believing that it was he who deceived my host under the name of a friend of our family. I am convinced it was he, added she; for all my other persecutors were not capable of shewing so much disinterestedness and discretion.

She would have continued to give me an account of what she had suffered from the duke of —, and her other lovers; but finding such a detail useless to all the ideas that possessed me, I interrupted her. The force of her inclination broke out so strongly in all the circumstances of her story, that I did not remember to represent to her, that a young lady ought to be upon her guard against all the foibles of her heart. There was no doubt remaining but that she passionately loved her unknown. Nevertheless her letter left me in trouble and discontent, which I would fain make her sensible of. I cut her short, when she began to hug herself for having escaped my reproaches. Hold, hold, said I pensively; if I commend your sincerity, do not imagine I approve your faults. This letter is a rashness which I cannot pardon. Have you considered to whom you have engaged yourself? shall a lady of your age promise her faith and her hand at a venture? shall she give it also to the exclu-  
sion

sion of every thing that prudence and honour might propose to her by the mouths of her friends? Ah! what will this be if you come to discover, in your unknown, a man unworthy of you? in one word, what can be the meaning of your promise? Is not this to revolt apparently against all the proposals of establishment laid down by your brothers, and one day to deliver yourself up in spite of them to the forwardness of a man whose honesty you are a stranger to but from his own testimony? But let us read this second letter, added I with more heat, and unveil by all sorts of means a mystery that begins seriously to alarm me. I have received this letter (says I) which the most pressing curiosity has not yet suffered me to open. It contains, like the first, lively protestations of love, with some marks of impatience for an expected answer: But, he adds, if I should make any difficulty of confiding in the tenders of a man unknown, he offers me that I should rely upon at my choice either twelve thousand franks every year to commence from this same day, or a thousand franks payable the first day of each month, without any other conditions than to engage me not to dispose of my sister till the time in which he promises to make her most rich and most happy.

This is too much indeed, cried I with a sort of indignation; I must suspect secrets that one must blush to acknowledge, and liberalities that aim at a mark so uncertain cannot flow from their source without reproach. I got off my chair in the same disposition, and ordering the messenger, who yet attended at the door, to come in, I said to him thus, without consulting Rose; return to your master, and let him know that you found with madam de ——— the dean of Coleraine, her elder brother and guardian: Since he has committed to you the secret of his affairs, tell him that I am a man of quality, a priest, and a gentleman: if he thinks me worthy of his confidence under one or other of these titles, I am ready to hear him in any place he thinks proper

to

to appoint me ; if he refuses, let him know I go to-morrow to Ireland with my sister. I shall wait his answer here.

Rose, towards whom I immediately turned myself, seemed to regret, that I had not given the messenger leave to reply, and that not having herself opened her mouth, he might report to his master that she appeared to have given her consent to a commission so severe. She nevertheless confessed to me, that she was rejoiced at the bottom of her heart, to see herself so near that eclairsissement she had always coveted. She flattered herself that her lover would consent to every thing rather than lose her ; and not having hitherto ascribed the mystery of his conduct to any thing but some perplexity in his fortune, or to some family consideration, she little feared to dive into the bottom of those obstacles, which were not capable of disheartening her. I employed an hour in fortifying her virtue against all kind of trials. At length the messenger appeared at the parlour door with an hired coach, which he prayed me to step into. He had a new billet for Rose. The circumstances obliged me to read it. It contained the complaints of a man in perplexity, who placed all his confidence, he said, in the integrity of his heart and the goodness of his mistress. Rose grew pale for fear, and seeing me ready to leave her, she conjured me with tears in her eyes to remember the tenderness I always had for her.

I gave myself up to the direction of the messenger, whose appearance shewed him to be above the condition of a servant. He declared to me freely, that he had orders to conduct me to the Carthusian monastery, and that his master would wait for me there in the cloister. Every place was indifferent to me. I carried with me the remainder of my emotion, which did not abate on the road. On our arrival at the monastery, my guide shewed me the cloister, where I should be attended.

In reality, I found there a man alone, who advanced towards me when he saw me appear. Having time to observe him as he approached near, I was struck with his port and shape. By his countenance I could guess him to be about twenty-seven or twenty-eight years old. His stature was free and majestic, his gait noble, his countenance engaging, his complexion sanguine, and his eyes delicate and open, although a little dejected by some traces of grief. He was plainly dressed, but with a taste and delicacy that proclaimed him a person of distinction. I wished, notwithstanding my vexation, that this was Rose's lover, and that his character was answerable to such fine appearances.

It was he himself: The respectful air, with which he accosted me, made me know him as much as his first overtures. If I speak to the dean of Coleraine, says he, I am before my judge; and I ought to endeavour to make him favourable. I answered him in a modest voice, that probity and honour being my rules, we could not be far opposite in sentiments, if he had those two virtues in his heart as I saw them painted in all his form. Alas! replied he, have you not already found me feeble on that side? but I shall assure myself to find in you as much goodness as I promise you integrity. Nevertheless, continued he, stepping forward to lead the way, you ought not to expect an entrance into long protestations of fidelity, when you receive so clear a testimony of it in the submission which I here shew to your pleasure. You have triumphed over a resolution in which I have been confirmed for near a year past. What have you not obtained by all the powerful menaces that you have employed? Hear me without interruption, and I require but as much indulgence from you as you shall find in me sincerity.

My name is the count of S——. I have twenty thousand crowns a year in estate, am of some reputation in the world, and my youth such as you see. I was not born to so much wealth, being the  
third

third son of a house more noble than opulent. Fortune left me no other choice to take than arms, which I have followed from my early youth. A lucky winter placed me in the esteem of an old widow, to whom her husband (who had enriched himself by business) had left all his wealth. She demanded my heart at the same price. The instances of my family made me get the better of my repugnance. I married her; and the same contract by which I sacrificed to her my fairest years made me master of all the wealth she possessed. But I have drawn little satisfaction from my riches. I stand in need of that sort of happiness which the mutual affection of hearts only yields. I imagine, that to arrive at that I must sooner or later have a young amiable woman, with whom I may have felicity in my turn at the price, if it must be so, of all the fortune which I am indebted for to love. I have seen your charming sister; she has inspired me with all the tender sentiments that are necessary to the delight of my life. I have endeavoured to let her know them and to merit her's. I have endeavoured to move her by all the methods of sincerity and honour. I have laboured to affect her by my complaints, to persuade her by my oaths. I have offered all my wealth to her, to her family. I have actually pressed her to accept at least of a small share of it for her use and yours; I am all her's, yours, and all those that belong to you. I beg you may think me sincere, that you may place a confidence in my honour and love, that the beautiful Rose may accept of my heart, and pledge to me her's. Is this a violation of rights, or a passing of bounds? Nevertheless, she has rejected all my offers, she will hearken to nothing, she will promise nothing, she places all on the authority of her brothers, and she has always insisted that my sentiments and views be declared to them. I confess that this condition has caused me some perplexities; but you know them now. Judge between us, my dear dean, added he, pressing my hands tenderly,

derly, and decide with goodness all the happiness of my life.

I looked on him with astonishment ; and not seeing any thing in his relation but what the natural sense of the words seemed to import, I was agreeably surprised to find the history of this lover so short, and the bottom of his sufferings so light. See, said I to myself, a lover perfectly modest, and perfectly fearful ; for with his birth, his age, his form, and an estate so considerable, how could he fear to discover his mind to Patrick, to me, to all those who wish the happiness and establishment of Rose ? He is not even ignorant that he is beloved ; and ought not this consideration alone to arm him with more assurance ? In fine, not finding any thing in this whole adventure but a subject for joy, and reasons for esteeming two lovers so reserved, I did not at all scruple to make him an answer conformable to my notions. I admire your reservedness, said I, and felicitate my sister for having inspired you with a love so tender. She has no fortune ; but you will not be deceived in believing her to be of birth and merit. I conceive that a lover rich and generous may find a pleasure of making the fortune of what he loves. We shall know one another better, added I, when from henceforth we shall see one another with more freedom : Apprehend no further obstacle, and count upon it, that an inclination so honourable for my sister will be approved by all the family.

He kissed my hand in a transport of joy ; and mine was very near equal to his. What hinders me, added I, from going this moment and presenting you myself to my sister ? Yes, says he eagerly, but I must caution you, that nobody be informed of my name ; the secret may remain between us, and I am responsible for the guide who conducted you here : You have taken him for a domestic ; but he is my best friend, is intrusted with the mystery, and has put himself into this disguise to serve me. This secret, which he yet seemed desirous should be kept so,  
appeared

appeared to me to be a very useless piece of caution. As I explained to him my thoughts, O Heavens ! interrupted he me in confusion, you have not at all understood me ! How so ? said I, with the same marks of astonishment. Alas ! replied he, have I not already told you, that I am married, and that my wife is not yet dead.

We were both put to a stand. So unexpected a discovery made me hang down my head to conceal my surprise and shame. Assuredly, answered I, you did not give me to understand that your wife was still living. This is indeed an openness of sincerity that I did not at all look for ; and which I would not have urged you to have had for me, if I had mistrusted the matter in the least : Nevertheless, I commend it, and shall be faithful in observing that discretion I promised you. I now conceive, continued I, lifting up my eyes to observe his countenance, from whence proceeded the difficulty you had in discovering yourself to my brother ; but I can by no means unravel what your views are in the trust you have reposed in me. Can you think me capable of favouring — ? Do not conclude any such thing, interrupted he me in transport ; do not add to my grief for so soon losing all my hopes, the suspicion of my intending any infamy. Heaven, whom I do not fear to call as a witness to the truth, sees the bottom of my heart, and knows that in this whole affair I have nothing to reproach myself with. But why have you interrupted me ? added he in an obliging tone : You promised to give me your attention ; but I find you are tired : I will only enter upon those explanations, for the sake of which you are come to this place : Do not condemn me, at least without having heard me.

I composed myself enough to give him all the attention he demanded. It is then true, says he, as I have confessed to you, that I am bound in very disastrous chains ; but I shall not bear them to my grave. In lamenting the rigour of my fate, I cannot repine  
at



at heaven for it, who makes it serve to insure me of one more happy. Madam de S—— is in a languishing condition: her age and her distempers do not promise her a life of six months. I have thought her gone twenty times by accidents that are renewed every day. Her death will leave me free; and what use do you think I shall make of my liberty? I will go and sacrifice it a-new at the feet of your lovely sister, but with a certainty of finding my happiness in living for her alone; I will make her absolute mistress of my fortune and of all my affections; she shall be my idol. You, your family, and all that belongs to you shall with me possess the place of those things that I hold most dear. Ah! what a happy recompence shall I receive for the constraint I have lived in to this hour! In expecting the day marked out by heaven, (added he more calmly, as if he had just recovered from a kind of raving) what laws, what maxims of honour or religion, can condemn the cares I would fain take for you and for your sister? What can hinder me from treating you as a brother, and her as a person the most beloved and honoured, to whom I for ever destine an absolute empire over all that belongs to me? Shall I not have the permission of employing a superfluous share of my riches in insuring a life of quietness and tranquillity to one from whom I wait for all my repose? I will not in the least publish my services, I will build nothing on my good offices or cares; I expect neither thanks nor condescensions: It is myself only I seek to please, in offering what I should be too happy to find accepted. I will renounce, if you please, even the pleasure of seeing her. She knows well herself, that this is a condition I have always submitted to: I shall wait the change of my fate to present to her all at once my heart, my estate, my person, and the name of my wife. He cast his eyes on me almost at every word, to discover what impression his discourse made on me; and thinking himself encouraged by a smile, (which his earnestness, joined to the  
incli-

inclination I really had for him, drew from me without any design) I must, continued he with a more gay and enlivened air, inform you to what pitch I am capable of carrying my discretion.

A letter of importance, in which the secret of my passion was contained, was one day torne with violence out of the hands of a lacquey I employed in my business. I mistrusted my misfortune, seeing the boy returned very pensive. He told me that a young gentleman of a good mein had surpris'd him in a lonely place, and with the point of his sword to his heart had forced him to give up the letter. But he had the presence of mind to follow him, and he told me where he lived. Though my name was not written in the billet, yet I could not think without passion, that so precious a piece should be in the hands of a stranger. My resentment would have broke out immediately in some violent enterprize, if just considerations had not withstood my transports. An intimate friend, my companion in the wars, and the sole confident of my love, came in luckily in the midst of my perturbation. I gave him in charge to clear up this cruel adventure. He returned in a few moments with such lights as cooled my anger, but increased my embarrassment. It was your brother who had undertaken to interpose between your sister and me, and to cut off from me all access to her. With what alarms did I not examine whether I had given room for his suspicions by any imprudence, and in what constraint did I not hold my thoughts during the whole continuance of this tempest? But from the picture that my friend drew of your brother, I could not resist a strong desire I had to see him. I forthwith sought the opportunity; the first that fell in my way laid me as it were under a necessity to look for others. I took an inclination for him, against which I could not defend myself. It seems, every thing that belongs to your blood has the same right to touch my heart. I had him dogged to discover his haunts and acquaintance. I frequented the same walks,

walks, and introduced myself into the same companies. Next to the sight of your sister, I know no thing could please me so much as his. However, being always withheld by my fears, I did violence to my inclination, which made me wish to converse with him alone, and to tie myself to him in the strict bands of friendship. I even shunned approaching him too near, or engaging with him in any conversation which I could not sustain without some embarrassment. So I kept myself on my guard until his departure, in opposition to the most tender sentiments of friendship and love; making it at once my dearest delight to surrender myself up to them, and at the same time all my employment to oppose them.

He left Paris. I did not for my part remain less steady to my principles, and if I ventured to renew to your sister some marks of my constancy, she can bear me witness with what respect they were always accompanied. From this time forward what difficulties might she have spared herself, had she lent an ear to my offers? I suffered more than she did from the strange situation to which she was reduced; but I accounted my silence among the proofs of my love; and by a new kind of obedience and respect I humbled myself to the torment of seeing her under indigence, to convince her that there was no exception in the oath I had made of being all my life devoted to her. If I watched about her, as a covetous man watches about his treasure, she was always ignorant of it. If I succeeded happily in procuring her some assistance, I had the joy of seeing her receive it without her knowing it. In fine, I fulfilled all duties, I submitted myself to all laws, and when I would have pressed you to receive for her and yourself that which my fortune put me in a condition to offer you, I had less thoughts of doing you a favour than of discharging an obligation, which draws its force from engagements that I desire to accomplish one day, and which are already covenanted for in the bottom of my heart.

He stopped, expecting my answer. I began by remarking, that he drew some hopes from a plausible turn he had given to his reasons; but that their length had afforded me time to embrace the side which I thought it my duty to stop at. That the objections, which cannot be a few, would expose me to a necessity of not seeing his replies brought to an end. I reduced my arguments to a very short way of reasoning. Without following you, said I, through the whole detail you have given, it is manifest you can have no pretence to my sister as long as heaven thinks proper to continue to you your spouse. It is no less an objection, that she would bring herself into discredit by seeing and hearing you. The only difficulty that remains between us is to know, if in the case you suppose yourself, that is to say, of every moment losing an old and infirm wife, you may cast your eyes on her whom you destine to fill her place, and if the promises you have made her with this view may authorize her to receive your favours. This question, added I, is altogether new to me, and I confess I have need of more than one day to resolve it. I leave you with that gratitude which I owe to your generous intentions, and I crave time sufficient for me to give you an answer. He would fain have detained me longer, and discovered some marks of impatience and sadness. I continued firm in my resolution of leaving him, and only took care to inform myself of the place of his abode, where I promised to carry him myself an eclarcissement, which I desired as much as he.

Though I was satisfied with my answer after I had left him, yet I remained over-burdened with two embarrassments, of which the least was capable of raising in me new inquietudes. I did not at all look upon as my most difficult task the consideration of the proposals of the count de S——, seeing I was master of my time, and that in a city so full of learning and learned men as Paris, I could not want advice; but I represented to myself the impatience of Rose, who  
had

had so tenderly recommended to me her interests; and under the irresolution that I brought back as the only fruits of my journey, nothing presented itself to my mind proper to give her satisfaction. The coach having carried me back with expedition, I was set down at the gate of the convent, before I had settled within myself what I should say to her. Nevertheless, I spent a moment alone, before I had her called, which gave me time to recollect myself. I saw the danger equal either in telling her the naked truth of what I had learned, or of concealing it from her intirely. Fond as she was of her lover, I feared to alarm her too much by an affected silence, or by declaring to her that she was in love with a man who was not at his own liberty, I had yet worse apprehensions, that I should expose her to some difficult conflicts, which might leave me room to be in dread for her virtue. Who knows, said I, if all those sentiments of religion and honour, which her hopes have hitherto maintained, can without great difficulty make resistance against despair? For expectations from the death of another are very precarious foundations for hope; and if love causes all those transports, which I have seen depicted, I cannot easily believe that it is capable of being contented with so slight a consolation. I have vanquished the heart of Patrick, but it was by motives that always make a just impression on the heart of a man of sense. I judge of it with confidence from my own. Can I judge in the same manner of the hearts of women? And what have I further to oppose to Rose but the common topics, over which they say love has so often triumphed? These reflections made me determine to take a medium between the two extremes, which at first sight stared me in the face.

She was not long before she attended my summons. I would not leave her one moment in suspense. I have seen your unknown, said I, I have learned from his own mouth his name, the circumstances of his affairs, and all the reasons that have obliged him to this mysterious conduct. I have found them just; but honour has closed up my mouth. It obliges you also

to moderate your sentiments, at least for so long a time as he shall be under a necessity of concealing his. I pity you both, and you in particular, if you should, perhaps, entertain other hopes; you will then have the shame of shewing less virtue and fortitude than he.

I should have hugged myself on this preamble, from the effect I saw it produce instantly in the satisfaction of Rose, if the joy itself she had shewn in having no other obstacle to surmount than that of time, had not sprung in me another scruple. My address has rendered her easy, said I to myself; but she will not love him the less ardently. Even the testimony I have given her of the integrity and constancy of her lover, will it not go a great way in creating to herself the law of submitting to the conquest of his double merit? But if the reason I have to conceal from her the situation of the count is a fear lest she should wound her duty by continuing to love him, will it less wound it to love him without knowing his situation? On the other hand, will not the crime, in which perhaps she will be justified by her error, fall directly on my head, since it will be attributed to the ambiguity of my expressions? The tenderness of my conscience was so much alarmed by this manner of reasoning, that I thought myself obliged forthwith to anticipate the evil I had caused. If you have fully understood me, said I to her plainly, you should look on your marriage as a thing so dark and difficult, that you ought long since to have prepared yourself to see it fail; and I foresee myself, added I, that in a few days honour will lay us under a necessity of returning speedily to Ireland. This reflection upon our departure was the more sincere, for that with all the reasons I had to desire it, I did not believe it could be deferred a moment, if the consultations I had a mind to have held on the case of the count de S——— should not be favourable for us: and to satisfy all my duties without rigour, I informed Rose, that for some days at least, which was the time I was to employ in clearing up matters to my satisfaction, decency would not permit her to receive letters from her lover. Whatever discretion

discretion she had hitherto observed in all these shifts and subterfuges, she penetrated further than was necessary for the removing of my scruples. Her eyes were filled with tears. Not having the courage to demand other explanations from me, she fell into a deep meditation, which gave me liberty for some moments to read in her countenance all the agitations of her heart. Ah! said she to me in the end, I see too plainly my fate! I shall be no more happy than my brother! Her grief touched me so sensibly, that I continued with her above an hour, using all my efforts to alleviate and soften it. But judging what she had to fear from the pains I took in consoling her, she did not give me the satisfaction of believing, when I left her, that she was in a situation the most calm and sedate.

In the mean time duty and honour not suffering a competition with the weakness of nature, I immediately thought of unravelling the point of controversy to which I ought to apply all my cares. Though the integrity of my intentions was capable of giving me some confidence in my own knowledge, yet I did not think that in an affair so delicate any trouble could be too excessive, nor the greatest precautions useless. I knew some doctors, who were wise and learned, and whose grave decisions unanimously given ought to be a law for all good men. I took the resolution of going to them successively, and of proposing to them my doubts. They all agreed in asking some days to inform themselves clearly of the controverted points by fresh study, and we agreed to meet at a certain day to consult together upon all the opinions. For my part, I passed the time as they did in reading over every thing that I thought necessary for my information, and above all to consult heaven, whose inspirations are sometimes the only resource of an upright heart in the doubtful questions of moral conduct. If I stole some hours every day from my labour, it was to comfort and support Rose, whose grief I perceived daily to increase. She spoke little to me. Under the suspense and perplexity in which my sincerity obliged me to leave her, she seemed every

time she saw me appear, immediately to expect those eclairsissements that I had made her hope for ; and when she perceived, at my first opening my mouth, that I brought her nothing but my ordinary consolations, I had a difficulty to make her break a melancholy silence, which gave me more inquietude than her tears and her complaints. Although she promised me to send back her lover's letters without opening them, and that she was not capable of breaking this promise, I remarked that it was a very sensible vexation to her not to have had one single opportunity of performing it. The discretion of the count retaining him within bounds, even more strict than I had imposed on him, he reduced himself to the requesting of me every day to send him what news related to him and us. I had the steadiness not even to apprise the melancholy Rose with this mark of his consideration and constancy, in order to accustom her insensibly to privations more grievous with which I thought her threatened.

At length, the day appointed for our consultation being come, we assembled in the closet of the most grave of my doctors, in the midst of his books and papers, which were, as one may say, so many dumb witnesses of the use he had made of the learning he had there imbibed. We were in number seven, of whom the youngest was more advanced in years than I. Having begun with a short prayer, every one took his place according to the order of his age. Mine intitled me to the lowest place, as much as the respect and deference I owed to an assembly whose opinions I implored. They kept silence for some time. At length, the senior, taking up the word, prayed me to open the occasion that had drawn us together, and upon what points I demanded the opinions of the company. I arose from my seat, and making a profound bow on my right hand and left, I began to lay down the question in the most plain and simple terms ; when the senior interrupting me with a peevish air, gave me to understand, that in every assembly, in which any person was acknowledged as chief or head, the first salutation ought to



to be addressed to him. Another of the doctors, turning himself immediately towards him, agreed that in general this proposition was just ; but not to mention, added he, that Mr Dean is dispensed by the title of being a stranger from conforming to our customs, we have not yet supposed that the civility of consenting to meet at your house was an act obliging us to acknowledge you to be our chief or head. That is true, interrupted the next. By what title ? said a third. The pretension to it is ridiculous and comical, replied another. In an instant, every one in their turns expressed some marks of discontent, that the senior should lay claim to a right, which no-body was willing to yield him. Although he was a little disconcerted by such an unanimous opposition, yet he insisted so strenuously on his claim, and the others were so serious and warm in contesting it, that they rose up all together, and left me under such an astonishment and apprehension, that I had that moment a mind to make the best of my way from among them.

Nevertheless, pleasing myself with the thoughts that the first heat would presently cool among such reasonable doctors, I ventured to represent to them, that my affair might be ended with fewer formalities, and that in the position they now were without distinction of degrees or ranks, every man might in two words declare his opinion. I know not whether it were from a consciousness of having discovered some tokens of weakness before the eyes of a stranger, but coming all at once to themselves, they put a stop to their quarrel in order to hearken to me. I calmly renewed my prayer, that they would give me their opinions in a few words. Ah ! very well replied the senior, (making haste to get the start of the others) without searching into the mystery, the man mentioned in your case is an adulterer in the bottom of his heart, and every woman who gives ear to his love participates in his crime. He turned his back-side upon us with an air of disdain after he had given this decision.

Another took up the discourse with more good humour : The opinion of master doctor, says he, casting a smile towards me, favours a little of peevishness that

our refusal has raised in him. My opinion is, that a man who is on the brink of losing his wife may with innocence enough cast his eyes on the lady whom he intends should succeed her, and may take the same honest measures before-hand to assure himself of her esteem and consent. I am of the same opinion, continued the third, but with a condition annexed, that nothing passes between them to injure the fidelity of the first marriage. I require something further, interrupted the fourth, before I can embrace an opinion so dangerous: I think that such a man and such a woman should not have any commerce together, either of friendship or plain civility, that may raise in the public the least suspicion of a scandalous familiarity. The senior, who had turned his face to the window, and did not seem to take any notice of what was said behind him, at once raised his voice,—Pleasant decisions, said he, splitting himself with laughter! those creatures have not so much as the shadow of divinity. Oh! pleasant in your teeth, replied he who had spoke last: I am ready to prove my opinion by all the fathers and the councils of the church. I challenge you to do so, replied the senior, turning himself roughly towards the assembly. I have here all the councils and all the fathers. Those who had been a little before of near the same opinion brushed up to him to let him know that he was in the wrong, and that a single doctor, whether he were their senior or pretended to be their head, ought not to get the better of an united body of the doctors. Moreover, citing divers passages, they altogether laboured to prove to him that they had given the natural sense of them; and that he could have but a slender knowledge in the Greek or Latin languages who could imagine the contrary. Greek and Latin languages, cried the old doctor in a rage, is it you then that pretend to teach them to me? And treating them as ignoramuses who had occasion every day to hear his lectures, he named to them an hundred treatises in Greek and Latin, upon which he offered to prove on the spot that they had not yet so much as cast their eyes. The noise of this strange dispute, which was greatly heightened by the media-  
tion

tion of those who had not yet spoke, and who would willingly be arbitrators of the quarrel, had already drawn all the servants to the door of the closet. I had luckily my hat and cane in my hands; I laid hold of the opportunity to gain the stairs, and marching down without turning my head behind me, I got away in all haste from the house.

My reflections were short upon this adventure. Having for a moment lamented the misfortune of a great number of learned men, who employed their understanding and knowledge in nourishing presumption and pride, I reproached myself for not having better known the characters of those whom I consulted, and whose air of gravity and reputation had so much imposed upon me. But maugre the ridicule of a scene so little expected, I concluded, from the difference of their opinions, that in an affair, wherein I would as little expose my own conscience as the honour of Rose, I ought to conclude less than ever from my own decision; which perhaps might have been to indulge something to the inclination and even advantage of Rose, by promising the count not to be in too much haste to dispose of her, without consenting nevertheless to receive favours from a man, whom I did not believe to be so much master of his substance, as to dispose arbitrarily of it. At the worst, I thought I might continue some time at Paris, and apply my constant cares in cherishing and amusing my sister under the perplexed state in which I had been obliged to put her. This was at least a situation of an innocent heart; and in the mean time I conceived, that I could not well remove her from Paris without exposing her to other dangers. The count appearing to me so prudent, that I might with safety depend upon him as to the innocence of his views, I perceived nothing in all these suppositions that might absolutely alarm my honour or conscience. Nevertheless, the repose of a Christian soul not being able to subsist under the least doubt, I was not a whit discouraged at the ill success of my first enterprize, and I resolved to lay the case rather before the assembly of Sorbonne, than to build my safety on my own understanding.

This was a new care, in which I employed myself the following days. With great labour I drew up a writing, wherein I laid down the question from all the arguments I could draw from authorities, from examples, and from the whole spirit of the legislature in the establishment of marriage. I had finished it, and I thought of nothing but of getting an opportunity of presenting it to the assembly, when a most unexpected blow made my work of no use. I received by the common messenger of the count of S———, a letter under his own hand, that gave an account of the death of his wife, with all the circumstances of it. He expressed himself on this loss in the words of a man of honour, who did not forget the gratitude he owed her at the time he was embarked in another interest. I shall always preserve, said he, that love for her memory, which I had all her life for her person; but not having ever had with her a relish for any other pleasures than those of duty, he confessed that his grief was not such as could be of a long duration after her death. That decency nevertheless, of which he was resolved to relax nothing to the end, hindered him from giving me an account of this news in person. He finished by recommending his affairs to my care, without naming my sister, or speaking one word of his passion; and I admired with what discretion he knew how to conciliate the duties of his mourning with the interests of his love.

Although it was difficult for me under such an event to distinguish how far charity obliged me to grieve, and within what bounds she permitted me to rejoice, I confess that my first impulse was to bless heaven, whose goodness had kept this favour for us as it were in reserve. My reflections next fell upon Rose. What was her joy going to be, said I to myself, and shall I not make all the haste in the world to tell her this news? Nevertheless, it appeared to me after a little deliberation that I ought to moderate my impatience. I had a thousand things to clear up. The estate, the condition, the character of the count were no otherwise known to me than  
from

from his own information, and if appearances had carried me to a belief of his sincerity, prudence would not give me leave to depend on outsides only. I gave him an answer, with which he ought to have been as well satisfied as I was with his letter. In a visit to my sister the same day, I limited myself to the point of raising her hopes by exhortations and caresses, from whence I remarked with joy that she herself drew a good omen. In leaving her, chance threw in my way my lord Linch, who was examining carefully the situation of the monastery. I had not seen him till now since his precipitate retreat, and having but a slender loss in his friendship, I had only inquired casually what part of the town he had chose for his abode. His lodgings were in the most remote part of the city from mine, and I never once thought of disturbing him. The sequel of his adventures gave me to understand, that he had not the same indifference for all my proceedings, and my accidental meeting him now gave me some cause of suspecting it. But besides, as his menaces had not given me any serious causes of alarm, I now thought my sister more secure than ever from his persecutions, by our new resources in the zeal and reputation of the count; and I thought no more than of striking hastily enough down another street, to avoid the necessity of speaking to him. He found no doubt that my design was to avoid him; but the manner in which he had treated me excused me from using him with more manners. Far nevertheless from having any mistrust of the bottom of his views, I employed myself during the remainder of the day in procuring informations and assurances of the integrity and uprightness of the count of S——. The death of his wife, which caused some motions in the neighbourhood of his house, made me easily find pretences for my inquiries; what I learned from many persons of honour and from his parish priest himself, to whom I, without any scruple addressed myself, convinced me, that in speaking of his birth and riches, he had made me a very modest draught.

Who would not have counted upon hopes so near and well established? In retiring to my lodgings I

proposed to see my brother next day at the Bastile, and to open to him the honourable match that offered for Rose. I had never any fear of finding in him an opposition to this project. He loved his sister; and his ambition not failing to flatter him as much with such an establishment as his tenderness, I was sure that in considering the proceedings of my lord Linch, the consent he had given to his solicitations would cost him nothing to retract. His own interest ought to make him wish for an alliance so powerful as that of the count; and I promised myself already, that his liberty would quickly be the consequence of it. So that heaven began on every side to favour the integrity and innocence of my desires.

I went into my lodgings filled with these ideas. But are not the dispositions of providence impenetrable? A strange lacquey, whom I presently remembered to have seen a long time before in the service of de Pesses, appeared before me, having his eyes filled with tears. He incontinently lamented his misfortune in the most moving terms, and many times pronounced the name of his dear master in reiterated sobs; he informed me, that this unhappy young man with whom he returned from Germany the day before, had lost his life by the hands of an unknown person. His groans and tears stopped his voice. I took him by the hand, and led him into my closet. I made him sit down near me; and not understanding any thing of a thousand unlucky accidents that he told me confusedly, I demanded of him the explanation of a misfortune, of which I had some difficulty to persuade myself.

He told me at length, coherently enough, that he had the charge of many papers, from whence I might draw important lights; but that his master having ordered him by his last words to give me an account of the circumstances of his disaster, and of his latest thoughts, he would begin with that recital. They arrived the evening before: The first care of de Pesses had been to receive the informations of his valet de chambre, whom he had left at Paris. Surprised at my return, and delighted that the protection of heaven had preserved Rose from a thousand dangers

during

during his absence, he shewed no greater eagerness than to see me; when the moment he was going out, an unknown person asked to speak with him, and had taken him aside. After a very long and exasperated discourse, the unknown gentleman retired, and Mr de Pesses, who spoke of nothing the moment before but his desire to see me, on the contrary had now forbidden his servants to give me any notice of his return till the next evening. He supped in their presence very composedly, and renewing his prohibitions went to bed, and nothing appeared to disturb his rest all night. The next morning he mounted his horse, attended by one lacquey only, who told me this story; and without communicating to him his design he rid to the forest of Boulogne, where he gave him orders to wait at the gate. Nobody saw what passed at that time; but in less than a quarter of an hour the same unknown gentleman, who had talked the evening before in private with him, appeared on horseback, and making out of the forest by the same gate, he bid the lacquey, having first asked him if he belonged to de Pesses, to carry help immediately to his master. This faithful servant clapping spurs to his horse galloped at full speed along the same road; and though his concern had not given him presence of mind enough to inform himself of the place where he might find him, yet his horse, which he saw fastened to the trunk of a tree, served luckily to discover him.

I found him, continued he redoubling his tears, stretched on the ground, and drenched in his blood. How! dead? says I, in a piercing fright for his chance in another life. No, replied he, but already so exhausted of all his strength that he had scarce any motion. He knew me;—I thank you for your zeal, said he to me, but if you will do me a sensible piece of service before my death, convey me with all speed to the dean of Coleraine. I gave him to understand that it was first necessary to begin by stopping his blood, which continued to run in great floods. He consented to this proposal: My cravat and his, a part of my shirt, and some of my cloaths, were conveniently

veniently employed in this melancholy office. When this was done, I immediately put myself in the great road, to find somebody to help to carry him. Four travellers, whom I stopped by the force of my intreaties, bore him between their arms to the house at the gate of the forest. In vain did I press to detain him there. He was put into an elbow chair, and he himself encouraging the bearers by the promise of a great reward, they carried him to the suburbs of St Honore, with orders to go directly to your lodgings. But the motion not being very gentle it weakened his strength, and a faintness seizing him at the entrance of the suburbs obliged us to go to the first surgeon we could find. When he recovered his spirits a little, he was of opinion he could not go much further without shortening the few moments he had to live. He suffered the surgeon to search his wounds, which were so mortal that he could not promise him an hour. Without being terrified with death, he ordered me to pray you to come immediately to him; but many messengers whom I dispatched one after another could not find you at home. During this time my unfortunate master had given orders for a confessor, and two of the nearest notaries, to be sent for to him. He remained some time shut up with them; after which calling for me, he paid his porters liberally, and with me chose to spend his last moments. You have always served me faithfully, said he, with a voice that grew feebler at each word; you shall be rewarded, but do not let your zeal slacken after my death, which I am sensible approaches. Hasten immediately to see the dean of Coleraine, and put into his hands these papers. He will take care of my funeral. Tell him that under my misfortunes I should have carried away some consolation, if I could have embraced him in my last moments. My life was devoted to him, to his sister, and to his brother Patrick. You will not easily see his sister; but if you should see her, tell her that I die for her. These were the last words of my dear master, added the sorrowful messenger, with a new accession of an abundance of tears. He in vain laboured to add more;  
for



for his grief stopped his voice, and hindered him from pronouncing any thing distinctly. I perceived all at once that his soul had abandoned him with the remainder of his strength.

In finishing this relation, he presented me with a bundle of papers, which were carefully sealed up. The deep consternation that seized me did not prevent my opening them immediately, with a desire of executing at least with as much diligence as zeal the last will of a friend so faithful and generous. The first writing I laid my hands on was a letter addressed to me. It had his signature to it, although the two pages, of which it was made up, were written in a character unknown to me. He was obliged, said he in it, to make use of the hand of his confessor to write me a letter, which I should not receive till after his death. Referring himself to his lacquey for the explanation of circumstances, he avowed, that without having ever known my lord Linch, he believed he died by his hand. It was the hand of a rival, and he did not know that he had any other but he. Besides, the language of his enemy confirmed him that he was a foreigner. Nevertheless, the desire of revenge had the least share in this discovery. That he thought he had just reasons to inspire me with some fear for my sister and myself, from a discourse which resentment had drawn from the mouth of his murderer. As much as he had been alarmed for our interest, so much did he think himself happy in hearing even from the mouth of a rival, that Rose made some account of the fervency and constancy of his love, and that she had happily declared herself in his favour. That without doubt it was to my friendship he was indebted for this change. What excess of happiness did death oblige him to renounce! But having nothing before his eyes but a grave open, and ready to receive him, he prayed me to make acceptable to my sister the only marks of gratitude that he had to offer her, and which I should find annexed to his letter. If the inclination of his heart, added he, had not incited him to what he had done in her favour, yet he should think him-

self

self obliged to it, to make an atonement for the only fault he had to reproach himself with, and of which he would now make to me a confession with his last words. Some hints from Patrick having made him despair to move the heart of Rose, he confessed to me, that on his return to Paris, the violence of a passion which he was no longer able to subdue, had made him form a resolution to steal her away; and that he ought to look upon his death as a judgment for a project so much the more detestable on this account, as he now had reason to flatter himself (from the confession of his rival) to have held in her heart a preference, of which he was not in the least worthy with such criminal thoughts. That the notaries, who had a duplicate of the act he sent me, would wait on me by his orders with an explanation upon other circumstances.

After a tender prayer he made me to cherish and love his memory, he informed me in a few words of a voyage he had made to Ireland on his return from Germany, and accusing himself of indiscretion in some intelligences he had given Patrick, whose establishment he was then ignorant of, he conjured me to repair the mortal wound he had given to his repose, and perhaps to the repose of his wife. Heaven will pardon me, added he, for this unhappy error, which was not at all voluntary. He finished with a last adieu.

What an overplus and surcharge of trouble and grief did I not feel after reading this letter! Every line was like a source of empoisoned vapours, which threw all my ideas and thoughts into an inexpressible confusion. I was about beginning again this fatal letter, to discover in it some day light amidst such thick darkness; but thinking nevertheless that the present circumstances obliged me to make every thing give way to the duties of friendship, I went on in opening the first paper that lay in my way. My surprise and confusion were augmented yet more in discovering in it a testamentary act, by which Mr de Pesses made an absolute donation to my sister of all his estate and substance. Not having friends so near, said he in the form of the preamble, nor so poor, to  
make

make him prefer the duties of blood to those of friendship, out of gratitude and esteem he constituted her his universal heir, &c.

Where am I? cried I. What torrents of difficulties and troubles come pouring down on me in the same day? What contradictions in the casts and chances of fortune! Or rather added I, adoring the incomprehensible wisdom of providence, what subjects, O my God, to admire the depths of thy dispositions? But to what point is it thy intention to conduct us by ways so superior to our vain prudence? It is to you, dear and virtuous friend, continued I, that we must begin to render the last duties of esteem and gratitude. The night is too far advanced, said I to the lacquey, who waited my orders, to take any resolutions before to-morrow; go and pass the remainder of it about your dear master; and depend upon a reward in proportion to your affection. I send with you a man of trust, to whom I give it in charge to regulate for this night every thing that decency and custom require about the dead; and I promise to be with you in the morning, to dispose things with more order and regularity.

I could not recover myself out of this medley of motions that succeeded one another in the bottom of my heart in so short a space. I retired alone into my closet, where my first care was to put up to heaven an ardent prayer, to grant to Mr de Pesses in a better life an hundred fold more happiness than he thought he lost in quitting this. His other papers contained explanations and lights into different parts of his substance. But I returned forthwith to his letter, which I read over with a fresh ardour. In the midst of the pity, which every word revived in me for his fate, how could the obscure hints that related to my sister and Patrick not raise in me some alarms? another disquiet seized me from the manner in which I weighed his words. He was persuaded from some expressions dropt to his advantage, that Rose was become more sensible of his merit. This was enough to give me to understand, that my lord Linch was his murderer; but could I not from  
thence

thence also conclude, if this vain thought had carried him out to fight against a furious rival, who had, as it were, taken upon himself to punish the happiness which Mr de Pesses had permitted to be ascribed to him, that this also had been the principal motive to the donation he made to my sister of all his wealth? And might she decently profit herself by his error? This was less a scruple of conscience than of honour: But I always held it for a principle, that these two words well understood are nearer a-kin than one thinks; or at least, that in all cases where they are not at all opposites, the law of honour is as indispensable as that of conscience. I was in this agitation of thoughts, given up successively to one or the other, and still too much swayed by my imagination to put them in more order, when word was brought me, that an unknown person inquired for me. It was past nine o'clock, and the night was dark. I scrupled some time to receive a visit so little in season; but in the moment I was giving a denial, he entered suddenly into my chamber; and this unknown, whose boldness at first struck me with some fear, was the Count de S——.

He had on him a perriwig and coat that disguised him, which however did not hinder me from knowing him immediately. After praying me to send away every body that might hear us, he threw himself about my neck, and held me a long time in his arms. My eagerness, said he, submitted in the day time to decorum; but nothing is capable of moderating it when it can gratify itself with honour. Will you reward me? added he in the same transport. Are you resolved to grant something to my heart? Shall I see the charming Rose? Will you permit me to love her? She has not waited my consent, replied I, embracing him in my turn, and I have betrayed her into a voluntary confession for you, that she should have suffered something, if her inclinations had been too long restrained by her duty. But how opportunely, added I, are you come here! Under the trouble I am, what need have I not of the consolation and counsel of a worthy man? In reality, the opinion I had of this  
amiable

amiable count, and the inclination he had shewed to love me, had made me regret that in my agitations I had not the power to open to him a share of my perplexity. He did not leave me the least doubt of the sincerity of his friendship. The interest of my sister had become his. His assistance was a resource upon which I had always counted. Moreover, not finding any thing in his visit that might not bear the name of an honest and innocent forwardness, I resolved to open to him my heart.

You shall see Rose, said I, having first ruminated a little ; you shall see her, as soon as the laws of custom shall enable you to discover openly the love you have for her. Your impatience would not be just, if it should make you think this period too long. But, added I with the same disquieted air, what can she lack, since you may see her when you please ? She is in a danger for which I tremble, and I shall not think her in safety till I see her your's. I did not exaggerate my fears in representing them in such lively colours. The new observations I had made to clear them up had augmented them to a point, when calling to mind my accidentally meeting my lord Linch about the convent, full no doubt with the same fury in which he came from dipping his hands in blood and seeking to satisfy it with other enterprises, I was under apprehensions that the night would not pass over without his committing some other glaring violence. In order to explain my distrusts to the count, I could not dispense with myself from acquainting him with the ancient pretensions of two rivals, who had unsuccessfully aspired to the heart of Rose, and the disastrous end of Mr de Pesses, with the late effects of his love and generosity. I did not name my lord Linch, of whom my profession did not permit me to be, as it were, an accuser ; but painting out his strange character in such colours as I knew it to be, I confessed to him, that we should have but little hopes of repose, unless we could find the means of removing so dangerous a man, or of concealing my sister from his pursuits.

other affairs at Paris. In fine, the length of this conversation making him think it necessary to retire, we embraced one another with all the tenderness of which we had just tied the knots; and if he carried away the satisfaction of believing, that his happiness was out of danger of a blow, I had the comfort of hugging myself more than ever on the good fortune of Rose, which appeared to me to be established on a solid foundation.

I had yet inquietudes enough remaining not to suffer me to reckon upon an undisturbed repose; so that I looked no further into the cause of a very grievous restlessness that tossed me about all night. Nevertheless, I could not in the end reflect upon this extraordinary disorder in my blood and all my spirits, without thinking that heaven was desirous to forewarn me by a kind of sensible chastisement, that I placed too much confidence in the measures of human prudence, and that I should be affected with circumstances quite different from those of which I thought myself assured. But the embarrassments, that held me employed the two following days, not having given me time to turn my reflections on that side, I fell directly down the precipice which I thought to have avoided.

In the morning I went to see the corps of de Pesses, which I found ready prepared to receive the solemnities of sepulture. The equivocal manner in which he spoke of his misfortune, having made it pass rather for an unexpected adventure, which caused less suspicion of a duel than of an assassination, no inquiries were made that might oblige me to use further precautions. I followed the advice of his confessor and the two notaries who assisted him, that it were better to deposit him in the parish where he died, than to remove him to that in which he lodged. They were afraid lest the pomp and noise might raise people's curiosity; and I entered into the same views as to the place of his interment. The rich present he made my sister had less share in the honours I did him than a sentiment of esteem and friendship, independent of interest, and which I always thought due to his person as much as to his services.

The notaries gave me an account of all they had done the evening before by his directions. They had, in my sister's name, put their seals on all that belonged to him at Paris; and they proposed to me immediately to secure in my own custody not only his papers and moveables, but some considerable sums of money which they found in his closet. This step seeming to require the participation of Rose, was a difficulty which I could not easily determine. Besides the promise I had made the count de S——, I had also my scruples of honour, which I was resolved to have cleared up, before I set forward any pretensions in regard to the rights of my sister. I put off the two notaries to the next day, in hopes that the advice of George (to whom I intended to pay a visit before evening, and whom I knew to be a properer person to determine a question of honour than a point of religion and conscience) might help to fix my doubts. I ought also to impart to him the intended marriage of Rose; and not having been absent from him above fifteen days, my sole design was to rid myself of all other doubts before I informed him of such happy news, and I flattered myself that this would help to establish peace and union in our family.

But this care seemed to me to be less pressing than that of preparing Rose to change her habitation, and of giving her all those explanations tending to her happiness, that her heart was impatient to hear. It would have been a cruelty to have held her too long in an ignorance with which I might be reproached, not only by herself, but her lover, whom I ought not to deprive of those sentiments whereof he was so jealous. He had no mistrust that my slowness did but ill correspond with his impatience; and the manner in which I had explained myself to him the night before could not give him any suspicion of that sort. On the contrary, I perceived that the moderation of his desires proceeded from the persuasion he was in, that my sister knowing all his ardour, and the happy change in her situation, would reckon herself accountable for the sacrifice he made to decorum. This would have been to deceive them both, as well as to deprive them  
without

without reason of a satisfaction so innocent. I went to Rose's convent, to please myself in contributing all in my power to the happiness of this pair of irreproachable lovers.

By what lights could I foresee that I was going to occasion them more mischief than I intended to procure them pleasure? It is here that without following the order of my own informations, I am going to unveil at one stroke what was for a long time concealed from myself, I mean an horrible treachery, that would have diffused too much obscurity over the most moving part of this history, had I delayed to unfold it, at a time when the compassion of heaven let me into the knowledge of it, that is to say, after the dire effects it produced. Those who had lost sight of my lord Linch, or who might have imagined that the terror of his crime ought to have made him abandon Paris, had taken up too favourable an idea of this furious Irishman. Encouraged by his boldness and obstinacy, rather than by any proper measures, of which he ought to have made a little account, he contented himself with changing his lodgings; and he thought of nothing but the means of gathering the fruit of his blind cruelty. All sorts of reasons removing from him the thoughts of appearing before me, my accidental meeting him the evening before, had in some measure embarrassed him, and I satisfied his desires as much as my own in passing down another street to avoid him. But the opportunity of seeing me come out of the convent, where he might easily imagine I went every day, and the memory he had preserved of the situation of the parlour since he had conducted Rose thither in company with me, raised in him a thought, of which the execution was but too easy for such an adventurer as he. In waiting till he found proper openings for his other designs, he resolved to dive into ours in procuring himself the means of hearkening to our discourse. A small sum served him to corrupt the exterior servants of the convent, and under such pretexes as he was pleased to make, he obtained the liberty of hiding himself the next day in the parlour towards the time that the custom of the cloister obliged



liged me to make my ordinary visits. A screen that stood some paces from the grate favoured his artifice; he was behind it when I arrived, and in a situation so commodious that he could not lose one word of our discourse.

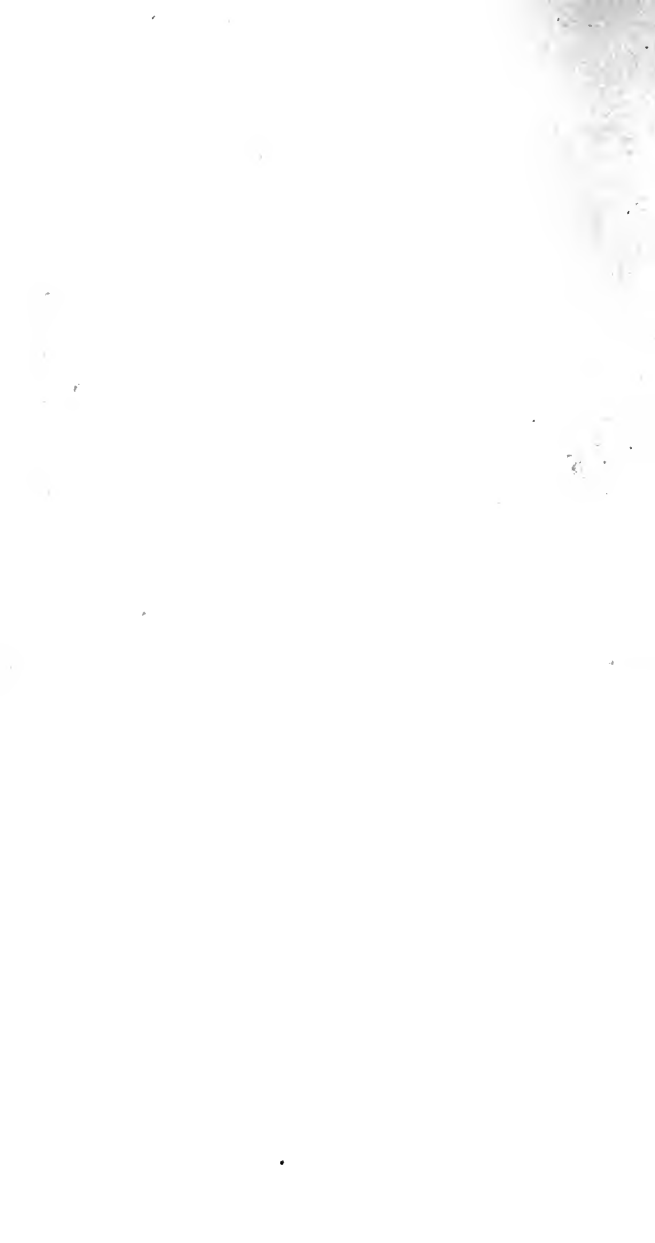
My heart being full of what I came to acquaint my sister with, and under no mistrust of a place which I took to be a sanctuary for secrets, I did not spare to use much tenderness and ardour in my expressions. I did not observe that Rose searched in my eyes for what she had no hope from my last promises. If all that you have desired, said I, be sufficient to make you happy, nothing now is wanting to compleat your satisfaction. All obstacles are over; you are free to love, sure of pleasing, and I require no other moderation in your sentiments, than that which you ought to submit to heaven, from whom you have received at once such an abundance of favours. Do not interrupt me, said I, seeing her joy endeavouring to break out, I publish to you a happiness which surprises myself, and which merits well to be explained. Your unknown lover is called the count de S——: His birth is distinguished, his estate considerable, and his love such as his conduct has already declared to you. He burns with impatience to see you his, and your marriage shall be celebrated to-morrow, if reasons, which we ought to approve of, do not yet oblige us to some delay. I continued to add all the testimonies which I thought due to the merit and forwardness of the count; and without blaming the modest disorder in which every word seemed to cast Rose, I commended her for being sensible to the love of a man as amiable as virtuous.

It was my own gratitude that guided my tongue. If one should represent to himself the tone of a discourse animated by a motive so tender, and the answers of Rose, who forthwith opened to me her heart with that trust which she reposed in a brother, whom she found a confidant as well as a friend, one may without difficulty conceive, that not only a single expression could not escape my lord Linch, but that in the progress of a discourse so animated, the just complaints

plaints we made of his barbarity were renewed more than once with as much bitterness as heat. He devoured them all. His curiosity stronger than his resentment inflamed him according to the measures in which I communicated my resolutions to my sister. At length, I acquainted her with the project I had formed with the count. He did not lose the least circumstance of it : And the means by which I flattered myself I should avoid his persecutions, became as it were the plan upon which he formed his own designs. I gave notice to Rose to hold herself in readiness to be gone the next evening in a coach of her lover's. With the precautions I have taken, said I, do not apprehend any thing from your persecutor. He is ignorant even of the road we shall take to get out of his way ; and from the description the count has made me of his country-house, I promise you there as much tranquillity as pleasure. The furious Linch will without doubt go over to look for you in Ireland ; but he will some time or other give me thanks for his error if it happens to help to save him here from punishment. You shall not see me again, added I, till to-morrow towards evening. Do not mention what I have told you to any person living, and only dispose your companions so as to take leave of them without surprise. I left Rose so much contented with this discourse, that I carried away with me a lively impression of her joy ; and every thing I did had some relish of it until the hour I had promised to rejoin her.

*The End of the FIRST VOLUME.*





**BINDING C... JUL 3 - 1968**

PQ  
2021  
D6E5  
1780  
v.1

Prévost, Antoine François  
The Dean of Coleraine

**PLEASE DO NOT REMOVE  
CARDS OR SLIPS FROM THIS POCKET**

---

**UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO LIBRARY**

---

